# METABELIAN $p$-GROUPS WITH FIVE GENERATORS AND ORDERS $p^{12}$ AND $p^{11}$ 

In commemoration of G. A. Miller

BY
H. R. Brahana

## 1. Introduction

This paper continues the study of metabelian groups with elements of order $p$ which are generated by five elements, and which are not direct products of abelian groups and metabelian groups with fewer generators. The problem is stated precisely and the method of investigation is explained in an earlier paper. ${ }^{1}$ In that paper the existence and the distinctness of eighty-five such groups of orders from $p^{15}$ to $p^{11}$ were established. This paper will establish the completeness ${ }^{2}$ of the list for these orders.

The considerations will all be geometric; nevertheless this is a paper about groups. The groups motivate the study of the complicated considerations required to determine invariants and to show in each case that a given set of invariants is sufficient to characterize a space. We shall be interested in planes and three-spaces in the finite nine-dimensional projective space $S$ which is determined by the Plücker coordinates of the lines of a projective four-space $X$ over $\operatorname{GF}(p)$. We classify planes and three-spaces of $S$ under collineations of $X$.

## 2. Geometric formulation

We state the problem in geometric terms; the reader is referred to the earlier paper for consideration of the bearing of this study, and also for any proofs required for statements in this section.

Denote the five elements which generate $G$, any one of these groups, by $U_{1}, U_{2}, \cdots, U_{5}$. Designate commutators of pairs of $U$ 's as follows:

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
U_{2}^{-1} U_{1} U_{2}=U_{1} s_{1}, & U_{3}^{-1} U_{2} U_{3}=U_{2} s_{5}, & U_{4}^{-1} U_{3} U_{4}=U_{3} s_{8} \\
U_{3}^{-1} U_{1} U_{3}=U_{1} s_{2}, & U_{4}^{-1} U_{2} U_{4}=U_{2} s_{6}, & U_{5}^{-1} U_{3} U_{5}=U_{3} s_{9} \\
U_{4}^{-1} U_{1} U_{4}=U_{1} s_{3}, & U_{5}^{-1} U_{2} U_{5}=U_{2} s_{7}, & \\
U_{5}^{-1} U_{1} U_{5}=U_{1} s_{4}, & & U_{5}^{-1} U_{4} U_{5}=U_{4} s_{10}
\end{array}
$$

[^0]If the $s_{i}$ 's are all independent, the group is of order $p^{15}$; all other groups satisfying the given conditions are quotient groups of this with respect to subgroups of the central $C=\left\{s_{1}, s_{2}, \cdots, s_{10}\right\}$.

Any element of $G$ is $c U_{1}^{x_{1}} U_{2}^{x_{2}} \cdots U_{5}^{x_{5}}$, where $c$ is an element of $C$ and $x_{1}, x_{2}, \cdots, x_{5}$ are numbers in $\mathrm{GF}(p)$. To this element we let correspond the point $x_{1}, x_{2}, \cdots, x_{5}$ in a finite projective space $X$ of four dimensions. A second element $c^{\prime} U_{1}^{y_{1}} U_{2}^{y_{2}} \cdots U_{5}^{y_{5}}$ of $G$ determines a second point $y_{1}, y_{2}, \cdots, y_{5}$ of $X$. The commutator of these two elements is $s_{1}^{a_{1}} s_{2}^{a_{2}} \cdots s_{10}^{a_{10}}$ where $a_{1}, a_{2}, \cdots, a_{10}$ are the Plücker line-coordinates of the line $x y$ in $X$. These numbers can be used as the coordinates of a point in projective nine-space $S$ over $\operatorname{GF}(p)$. Every point of $S$ determines a cyclic subgroup of $C$, the central and the commutator subgroup of $G$ of order $p^{15}$.

The points of $S$ which correspond to commutators, or which correspond to lines of $X$, are points of the $V_{6}^{5}$ defined by $B_{1}=B_{2}=\cdots=B_{5}=0$, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=a_{1} a_{8}-a_{2} a_{6}+a_{3} a_{5}, \\
& B_{2}=a_{1} a_{9}-a_{2} a_{7}+a_{4} a_{5}, \\
& B_{3}=a_{1} a_{10}-a_{3} a_{7}+a_{4} a_{6} \\
& B_{4}=a_{2} a_{10}-a_{3} a_{9}+a_{4} a_{8}, \\
& B_{5}=a_{5} a_{10}-a_{6} a_{9}+a_{7} a_{8} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We shall designate this locus by $V$.
Every group satisfying the given conditions will be obtained by setting certain elements of the commutator subgroup of the biggest group equal to identity. Elements dependent on those set equal to identity will constitute a subgroup of $C$ and will correspond to a linear space in $S$. Different subgroups of the same order will correspond to subspaces of the same dimension; if these subspaces of $S$ have different relations to $V$, then the corresponding quotient groups of $G$ will be groups that are not simply isomorphic. We are to see that there are just 22 types of plane and 58 types of three-space in $S$; points and lines were discussed completely in the earlier paper.

We list some facts that will be needed in all that follows.
(1) The lines of a pencil in $X$ determine the points of a ruling of $V$.
(2) A point $P$ of $S$ not on $V$ is on a line joining two points of $V$; a choice of coordinate system in $X$ will put $P$ in the form $1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0$.
(3) Two points of $V$ on a line with $P$ not on $V$ are images on $V$ of two skew lines in $X$; these lines determine a three-space $R$ in $X ; R$ depends on $P$ only, and not on the points of $V$ which were used to define it.
(4) The equation of $R$ is $B_{5} x_{1}-B_{4} x_{2}+B_{3} x_{3}-B_{2} x_{4}+B_{1} x_{5}=0$, where the $B$ 's are those for the point $P$ which determines $R$.
(5) We denote by $\Sigma$ the five-space in $S$ determined by the lines of a threespace in $X$; a point $P$ in $S$ is in one and only one $\Sigma$ unless $P$ is on $V$. Lines, planes, etc. in a $\Sigma$ are called $\Sigma$-lines, $\Sigma$-planes, etc.
(6) A line in $S$ not a $\Sigma$-line has one or no points on $V$; respective canonical forms are $k, 0,0, l, 0,0,0, k, 0,0$ and $k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$.
(7) The line $k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$ determines a unique point $M$ on $V$ such that the plane determined by $M$ and the line is tangent to $V$ at $M$. The six-dimensional space tangent to $V$ at $M$ contains planes, three-spaces, etc., which we shall call $\tau$-planes, $\tau$-three-spaces, etc.
(8) So much use will be made of the close connection between the canonical form $k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$ in $S$ and the frame of reference in $X$ that we shall describe it briefly here. Let $l$ be a line in $S$ which is not a $\Sigma$-line and has no point on $V$. Let $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ be arbitrary points on $l$; let $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$ be the corresponding three-spaces in $X$; let the plane of intersection of $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$ be $\sigma$; let the images on $V$ of the lines of $\sigma$ be the points of the plane $\pi$; and let $\Sigma_{1}$ and $\Sigma_{2}$ be the five-spaces in $S$ which contain $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ respectively. The polar of $P_{1}$ with respect to the intersection of $V$ and $\Sigma_{1}$ intersects $\pi$ in a line $l_{1}$; likewise $P_{2}$ determines a line $l_{2}$ in $\pi$. Lines $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ intersect in the point $M$. A line joining $P_{1}$ to a point $Q_{1}$ on $l_{2}$ and not $M$ intersects $V$ in a second point $Q_{1}^{\prime}$; a line joining $P_{2}$ to a point $Q_{2}$ on $l_{1}$ and not $M$ intersects $V$ in $Q_{2}^{\prime}$. The points $M, Q_{1}, Q_{2}, Q_{1}^{\prime}, Q_{2}^{\prime}$ are images on $V$ of lines $m, q_{1}, q_{2}, q_{1}^{\prime}$, $q_{2}^{\prime}$ in $X$; these lines have the following relations: $m, q_{1}$, and $q_{2}$ are in the plane $\sigma$, and the intersection of $q_{1}$ and $q_{2}$ may be taken to be $A_{1}=1,0,0,0,0 ; m$ and $q_{1}$ intersect at $A_{2}=0,1,0,0,0 ; m$ and $q_{2}$ intersect at $A_{3}=0,0,1,0,0 ; q_{1}^{\prime}$ passes through $A_{3}$ and contains $A_{4}=0,0,0,1,0 ; q_{2}^{\prime}$ passes through $A_{2}$ and contains $A_{5}=0,0,0,0,1$. With this choice of a coordinate system in $X$ and the corresponding determination of the coordinate system in $S$, the line takes the canonical form above. This rapid description shows the great arbitrariness in choosing a coordinate system to give a line the canonical form. By taking advantage of this arbitrariness we get a start in classifying planes.

## 3. The planes of $S$

(i) $\Sigma$-planes in $S$. There are $\Sigma$-planes in $S$; each such plane lies in the $\Sigma$ determined by the lines of a three-space in $X$. In dealing with them we may neglect $X$ and consider only the three-space. These planes were all determined in a previous paper. ${ }^{3}$ The $\Sigma$-planes are

1. $k, l, 0,0, m, 0,0,0,0,0$, the image of a plane of lines in $X$.
2. $k, l, m, 0,0,0,0,0,0,0$, the image of a bundle of lines in $X$.

[^1]3. $k, l, 0,0,0,0,0, m, 0,0$, which intersects $V$ in two lines.
4. $k, l, m, 0,0,0,0, k, 0,0$, which intersects $V$ in one line.
5. $k, l, 0,0,0, m, 0, k, 0,0$, which intersects $V$ in a conic.
6. $k, l, m, 0,0, r l, 0, k, 0,0 \quad(r$ not a square), which intersects $V$ in a point.

The intersection of $V$ and $\Sigma$ is a four-dimensional hyperquadric. Any plane in $\Sigma$ then intersects $V$ in a conic or else lies wholly on $V$. The latter possibilities are 1 and 2 . If the conic is not degenerate, the plane is 5 ; if the conic is degenerate with one vertex, it is 3 if the quadratic polynomial is factorable in $\mathrm{GF}(p)$, otherwise it is 6 ; if the conic has a line of vertices, the plane is 4 . The proofs that planes having the properties listed can be put in the forms given are not attempted here; they are given, however, in the paper cited, and they are not hard to supply.
(ii) A preliminary classification of planes not in any $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$. A plane $\rho$ which is not in any $\Sigma$ contains points not on $V$, for a plane lying on $V$ is determined by three points of $V$ which are images of three lines in $X$ that intersect in pairs, and three such lines either lie in a plane or pass through a point, in either of which events they lie in a three-space. Let $\rho$ contain the point $P$ which is not on $V$. $P$ determines a five-space $\Sigma$, and $\rho$ does not lie in $\Sigma$. If $\rho$ contained as many as four points of $V$ no three of which were collinear, then $\rho$ would be a $\Sigma$-plane. One of the vertices of the diagonal triangle of the quadrangle determined by the four points would be not on $V$ and so could be taken for $P$ above. The three-space determined in $X$ by $P$ would contain the lines of which the four points of $V$ are images, and so the corresponding $\Sigma$ would contain $\rho$. Therefore any plane of $S$ which is not a $\Sigma$-plane intersects $V$ in $0,1,2,3$ points, in a line, or in a line and one additional point.

Unless $\rho$ is a $\Sigma$-plane, it cannot contain two $\Sigma$-lines which intersect in a point not on $V$. Hence every $\rho$ which is not a $\Sigma$-plane contains a line $l$ which is not a $\Sigma$-line. If $\rho$ intersects $V$ in a line, then every $l$ has a point on $V$; if $\rho$ does not contain a line of $V$, then $\rho$ contains an $l$ which has no point on $V$. Hence, any plane $\rho$ which is not a $\Sigma$-plane contains one or the other of the lines given in (6) of Section 2.
(iii) Some transformations of $S$ which leave a line fixed. The planes $\rho$ of $S$ which contain $0,1,2$, or 3 points of $V$ all contain the line $k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$ which we shall call $P_{1} P_{2}$ with $P_{1}$ given by $l=0$ and $P_{2}$ by $k=0$. Each such $\rho$ is given by one additional point whose coordinates may be modified by using some of the freedom noted when we discussed the canonical form of $P_{1} P_{2}$. We give here three transformations of $S$ into itself which leave the form of $P_{1} P_{2}$ unchanged. We employ the notation of Section 2.

For the first transformation we move $A_{4}$ along $q_{1}^{\prime}$ and $A_{5}$ along $q_{2}^{\prime}$, leaving $P_{1}, P_{2}, Q_{1}, Q_{2}, Q_{1}^{\prime}, Q_{2}^{\prime}$ fixed. Denote this transformation by $T_{1}$. The effect of $T_{1}$ in $X$ is described by the matrix of coefficients

$$
\left[\begin{array}{lllll}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & a & 1 & 0 \\
0 & b & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$

in expressions of the new coordinates in terms of the old. The matrix which follows is the description of $T_{1}$ in $S$ by means of the matrix of coefficients in the expressions of the old coordinates in terms of the new; its elements are the properly ordered two-rowed minors of the inverse of the matrix above.

$$
T_{1}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -a & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-b & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & b & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a b & b & 0 & 0 & -a & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

The second transformation $T_{2}$ represents the changes in the coordinate systems brought about by moving $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$ along the lines $l_{2}$ and $l_{1}$ respectively, still leaving $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ fixed. The points $A_{4}$ and $A_{5}$ are not determined by the $Q$ 's, but a combination of $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$ will do all that can be done in that respect. The following transformation moves $Q_{1}$ to $\bar{Q}_{1}=Q_{1}+k M$ and $Q_{2}$ to $\bar{Q}_{2}=Q_{2}+l M$.

$$
T_{2}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -k & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & -l & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-k & 0 & 1 & 0 & k^{2} & -l & 0 & k & 0 & 0 \\
0 & l & 0 & 1 & -l^{2} & 0 & -l & 0 & k & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & l & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & k & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -k l & 0 & -k & -l & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

For the third transformation $T_{3}$ we let the point $a P_{1}+P_{2}$ play the role of $P_{2}$ and determine a coordinate system so that $P_{1}$ and the new $P_{2}$ have coordinates in canonical form. There is arbitrariness in the choice of $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$ as well as in the choice of $A_{4}$ and $A_{5}$. We shall carry out the selections which determine the matrices of $T_{3}$ in $X$ and in $S$.
$P_{1}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0$.
$R_{1}: \quad x_{5}=0$.

$$
P_{2}=a, 1,0,0,0,0,1, a, 0,0 .
$$

$$
R_{2}: \quad a x_{1}+x_{4}+a^{2} x_{5}=0
$$

$\sigma=\left\{\begin{array}{l}0,1,0,0,0 \\ 0,0,1,0,0 \\ -1,0,0, a, 0 .\end{array}\right.$

$$
\pi=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0 \\
1,0,0,0,0, a, 0,0,0,0 \\
0,1,0,0,0,0,0, a, 0,0
\end{array}\right.
$$

$l_{1}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0 \\ a,-1,0,0,0, a^{2}, 0,-a, 0,0 .\end{array}\right.$
$l_{2}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0 \\ 1,0,0,0,0, a, 0,0,0,0 .\end{array}\right.$
$M=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$.
$Q_{1}=1,0,0,0,0, a, 0,0,0,0$.
$Q_{1}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0,0,-a, 0,1,0,0$.
$Q_{2}=a,-1,0,0,0, a^{2}, 0,-a, 0,0$.
$Q_{2}^{\prime}=-2 a, 0,0,0,0,-a^{2},-1,0,0,0$.
$q_{1}= \begin{cases}0,1,0,0,0, & A_{2} \\ -1,0,0, a, 0, & A_{1}\end{cases}$
$q_{2}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}-1,0,0, a, 0 \\ 0,-a, 1,0,0 .\end{array}\right.$
$q_{1}^{\prime}= \begin{cases}0,-a, 1,0,0, & A_{3} \\ 0,0,0,1,0, & A_{4}\end{cases}$

The $A$ 's at the right just above designate the points selected for the vertices of the new frame of reference in $X$. The matrix of $T_{3}$ in $X$ is the set of $A$ 's in their proper order. The matrix in $S$ is

$$
T_{3}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
a & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a^{2} & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -a^{2} & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-2 a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a^{2} & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
-2 a^{2} & -2 a & 0 & 0 & 0 & a^{3} & a & a^{2} & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -2 a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

(iv) Planes with no point on $V$. Among planes which contain the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ of (iii) are those with no point on $V$. These planes are
7. $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k+r m, m, 0$.
8. $k, l, m, 0,-r m, 0, l, k, 0,0$.
9. $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m$.

We proceed to show that if $\rho$ is not a $\Sigma$-plane and has no point on $V$ it can be put in one of these forms. The plane is determined by $P_{1}, P_{2}$, and a third point which may be taken to be

$$
P_{3}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, a_{10}
$$

We consider first the possibility that $\rho$ is a $\tau$-plane. The line $P_{1} P_{2}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $M=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$. If $P_{3}$ is in that tangent space, $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. Any point in $\rho$ is $P=k P_{1}+l P_{2}+m P_{3}$. Conditions that $P$ be on $V$ are

$$
\begin{gathered}
k^{2}+a_{8} k m-a_{6} l m=0, \quad a_{9} k m-l^{2}-a_{7} l m=0 \\
\left(a_{7} a_{8}-a_{6} a_{9}\right) m^{2}+k l+a_{7} k m+a_{8} l m=0
\end{gathered}
$$

Eliminating $m$ between the last two congruences, we get

$$
a_{9} k^{3}-a_{7} k^{2} l+a_{8} k l^{2}-a_{6} l^{3}=0
$$

Since there exist irreducible cubic congruences, it follows that there exist $\tau$-planes with no point on $V$. We note that the above conditions are independent of $a_{5}$. Moreover, neither $a_{6}$ nor $a_{9}$ is zero, and so $a$ or $b$ in $T_{1}$ can be selected so that $P_{3}^{\prime}$ has $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$.

Now let $\rho$ be the plane determined by $P_{1}, P_{2}$, and

$$
P_{3}=0,0,0,0,0, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0
$$

where the cubic $a_{9} \theta^{3}-a_{7} \theta^{2}+a_{8} \theta-a_{6}$ is irreducible. If we apply transformation $T_{3}$ with $a=1$, the point $P_{3}$ goes into
$P_{3}^{\prime}=-2 a_{7}-2 a_{9},-2 a_{9}, 0,0,0, a_{6}+a_{7}+a_{8}+a_{9}, a_{7}+a_{9}, a_{8}+a_{9}, a_{9}, 0$.
The point in $\rho$ whose first two (new) coordinates are zeros has for its nonzero coordinates $a_{6}^{\prime}, a_{7}^{\prime}, a_{8}^{\prime}, a_{9}^{\prime}$ which are the coefficients of the transform of the irreducible cubic by $\theta=\theta^{\prime}-1$. The interchange of $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ performs the same transformation on the cubic as does $\theta=1 / \theta^{\prime}$; the transformation in $X$ which leaves the vertices of the frame of reference fixed and changes the unit point to $d, 1, d, 1, d^{2}$ performs the transformation $\theta=d \theta^{\prime}$ on the cubic. These transformations generate the linear fractional group on $\theta$, and under this group all irreducible cubics are conjugate. Hence, in any $\tau$-plane which has no point on $V$, points can be selected so that $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are in canonical form and $P_{3}=0,0,0,0,0,1,0, r, 1,0$, where $x^{3}+r x-1$ is an arbitrary irreducible polynomial. This is plane 7.

For any other plane on $P_{1} P_{2}$ the tangent space at $M$ cannot contain $P_{3}$, and hence not all of $a_{3}, a_{4}$, and $a_{10}$ are zero. We note that transformations $T_{1}, T_{2}$, and $T_{3}$ all leave $a_{4}$ unchanged, and that $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$ leave $a_{3}$ and $a_{10}$ unchanged also. We separate the planes into two classes: (1) those determined by $P_{3}$ with $a_{4}=0$, and (2) those determined by $P_{3}$ with $a_{4} \neq 0$.
(1) Suppose $a_{4}=0$ and $a_{10} \neq 0$. We may apply $T_{3}$ with $a_{3}-2 a_{10} a=0$ and obtain $a_{3}^{\prime}=0$. Since $\rho$ contains $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$, it contains a point $P_{3}=0,0,0,0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, a_{10} .^{4} \quad$ Application of $T_{2}$ will give $a_{7}=a_{8}=0$, and $T_{1}$ will give $a_{6}=a_{9}=0$. By proper choice of the unit point we obtain
(a) $P_{3}=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1$.

[^2]The other planes of set (1) are those for which $a_{10}=0$ and hence $a_{3} \neq 0$. Applying $T_{2}$ with $2 a_{3} k+a_{8}=0$ and $-a_{3} l+a_{6}=0$ gives $a_{6}=0$ and $a_{1}=a_{8}$. Then $\rho$ contains the point $P_{3}=0,0, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, 0, a_{7}, 0, a_{9}, 0$. When $a_{9} \neq 0$, we may apply $T_{1}$ with $a_{5}+b a_{9}=0$ and $-a_{3} a=a_{7}$ to remove $a_{5}$ and to make $a_{2}=a_{7}$. When $a_{9}=0, T_{1}$ can be applied to make $a_{2}=a_{7}$. In both cases, $P_{3}$ can be changed to a point which has $a_{2}=a_{7}=0$. Thus we have the possibilities:
(b) $P_{3}=0,0, a_{3}, 0,0,0,0,0, a_{9}, 0$,
(c) $P_{3}=0,0, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0,0$.

We note that in the case of (c) the line $P_{1} P_{3}$ is a $\Sigma$-line.
(2) Now suppose $a_{4} \neq 0$. Then in consideration of $T_{3}$ we may suppose $a_{10}=0$. We consider first those planes given by $P_{3}$ with $a_{3} \neq 0$. With proper choice of $k$ and $l, T_{2}$ gives $a_{6}=a_{9}=0 . \quad P_{3}$ can be selected in $\rho$ so that $a_{7}=a_{8}=0$. Applying $T_{1}$ with proper choice of $a$ and $b$ will change $a_{1}$ and $a_{2}$ to zero. Hence, we have
(d) $P_{3}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0,0$.

Finally, suppose $a_{3}=0 . \quad T_{2}$ and a change of $P_{3}$ will remove $a_{2}, a_{7}, a_{8}$, and $a_{9}$, introducing $a_{1} \neq 0$. We then have

$$
P_{3}=a_{1}, 0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0,0,0,0
$$

$T_{1}$ can be used to remove $a_{1}$ and to remove $a_{5}$ if $a_{6} \neq 0$. We have the possibilities:
(e) $P_{3}=0,0,0, a_{4}, 0, a_{6}, 0,0,0,0$,
(f) $\quad P_{3}=0,0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0,0$.

In the case of (f), $P_{2} P_{3}$ is a $\Sigma$-line.
We shall now show that the plane determined by (a) contains no $\Sigma$-line, so that planes (c) and (f) are different from (a). Denote the plane given by (a) as $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m$. A point $P=k, l, m$ in it determines the three-space

$$
R: \quad\left(m^{2}+k l\right) x_{1}-l m x_{2}+k m x_{3}+l^{2} x_{4}+k^{2} x_{5}=0
$$

If $P$ is on the line $m=0$ (i.e., the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ ), $R$ is $k l x_{1}+l^{2} x_{4}+k^{2} x_{5}=0$. If $P$ is $P_{3}, R$ is $x_{1}=0$. For no $k$ and $l$ can these be the same $R$, and hence a $\Sigma$-line in $\rho$ does not pass through $P_{3}$. A $\Sigma$-line in $\rho$ must therefore intersect $P_{1} P_{3}$ and $P_{2} P_{3}$ in distinct points. If $P$ is on the line $l=0, R$ is $m^{2} x_{1}+k m x_{3}+$ $k^{2} x_{5}=0$; if $P$ is on $k=0$, then $R$ is $m^{2} x_{1}-l m x_{2}+l^{2} x_{4}=0$. These $R$ 's are the same only if the corresponding $P$ 's are the same. Hence, $\rho$ contains no $\Sigma$-line.

We next show that the planes determined by (a), (b), (d), and (e) are the same, and those determined by (c) and (f) are the same; they are respectively planes 9 and 8 above.

The transformations used so far to simplify the coordinates of $P_{3}$ have all left the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ fixed; in order to go farther it will be convenient to change to a different $P_{1} P_{2}$. If in (b) wemake the change $P_{1}^{\prime}=P_{1}, P_{2}^{\prime}=P_{3}, P_{3}^{\prime}=P_{2}$, and then change the coordinate system so that $P_{1}^{\prime}$ and $P_{2}^{\prime}$ are in canonical form, ${ }^{5} P_{3}^{\prime}$ becomes $0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1$. If in (e) we interchange the rôles of $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$, we obtain (a) again. In (d) we may take $P_{1}^{\prime}=P_{1}+P_{2}$, $P_{2}^{\prime}=P_{1}-P_{2}, P_{3}^{\prime}=P_{3}$, and this will change (d) into (a). Hence, any plane in $S$ which has no point on $V$, contains no $\Sigma$-line, and is not a $\tau$-plane can be put in the form 8 .

Interchange of $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ interchanges (c) and (f). Hence, any plane in $S$ which has no point on $V$, is not a $\tau$-plane, but which contains a $\Sigma$-line, can be put in the form 9 . This concludes the determination of planes that do not intersect $V$.
(v) Planes with 1, 2, or 3 points on $V$. The planes with 1, 2, or 3 points on $V$ all contain a line $P_{1} P_{2}$. The transformations in (iv) still pertain; the present planes were excluded by requiring that there be no point on $V$. By looking more closely at that requirement we determine the planes:
10. $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0,0$.
11. $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k, 0,0$.
12. $k, l, m, 0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$.
13. $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l-r m, k, 0,0 \quad(r$ not a square).
14. $k, l, m, r m, 0,0, l, k, 0,0$.
15. $k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0, m$.
16. $k+m, l, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$.
17. $k+m, l, m, 0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$.
18. $k+m, l+m, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$.

When $\rho$ is a $\tau$-plane, it will be determined by $\mathrm{P}_{1} \mathrm{P}_{2}$ and the point $P_{3}=0,0,0,0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0$. The polynomial $f(\theta)=a_{9} \theta^{3}-a_{7} \theta^{2}+$ $a_{8} \theta-a_{6}$ will now be reducible. The transformations on this polynomial in (iv) show that unless $f(\theta)$ is identically zero we may suppose $a_{6}$ or $a_{9}$ is not zero, and hence $a_{5}$ may be made zero. The one case it may not be made zero gives plane 10 ; this plane is obviously unique, since $P_{1} P_{2}$ determines the unique point $P_{3}=M$. Plane 10 has one point on $V$ and is tangent to $V$ at that point.

The reducible $f(\theta)$ may be a cube as is given by $11 .{ }^{6}$ This plane has one point on $V$ and contains the tangent line $l=0$.

If $f(\theta)$ is the product of a linear and an irreducible quadratic factor, the plane is 13 which has one point on $V$ and no line tangent to $V$. If $f(\theta)$ is the product of a linear factor by the square of another, the plane is 16 . For this

[^3]the $P_{3}$ in the proper form gives $f(\theta)$ which is reduced to $\theta . \quad f(\theta)=0$ has the root zero and the double root infinity. Plane 16 has two points on $V$. If $f(\theta)$ has three distinct linear factors, the plane is 18 ; it has three points on $V ; f(\theta)=\theta^{2}-\theta$.

When $\rho$ is not a $\tau$-plane, $P_{3}$ can be made to take one of the forms (a) to (f) of (iv) with the added possibility that some of the $a$ 's are zeros. Case (a) was obtained on the assumption that $a_{10} \neq 0$; if in this case $a_{5}=0$, we have plane 15. This plane has one point on $V$ and no tangent line.

In cases (b) and (c) we have $a_{3} \neq 0$. If in the respective cases $a_{9}=0$ and $a_{5}=0$, we have plane 12 which has one point on $V$ and the line $l=0$ tangent to $V$. If in (c) $r=-a_{5} / a_{3}$ is not a square, we have plane 8 with no point on $V$, but if $r$ is a square we have plane 17 , with two points on $V .{ }^{7}$

Both (e) and (f) reduce to $0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0$ which gives a $\rho$ that is changed into 12 by interchanging $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$.

In case (d) we could have $a_{5}=0$, in which case we have plane 14 if $r=$ $a_{4} / a_{3}$ is not a square. This has one point on $V$ and no tangent line. If $r$ is a square, the plane will still have one point on $V$ and no tangent line. The planes for $r$ a square and $r$ not a square are different. To see this, consider the plane

$$
k, l, m, r m, 0,0, l, k, 0,0 .
$$

The three-space in $X$ determined by a point $k, l, m$ is

$$
k l x_{1}-r k m x_{2}-l m x_{3}+l^{2} x_{4}+k^{2} x_{5}=0
$$

By means of this relation every point of $X$ determines a conic in $\rho$. Now, $\rho$ has a special point, $P_{3}$, which is on $V$ and is the image of a line $p_{3}$ in $X$. The points of $p_{3}$ determine the conics of a special pencil in $\rho$.

$$
P_{3}=0,0,1, r, 0,0,0,0,0,0 \quad \text { and } \quad p_{3}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
1,0,0,0,0 \\
0,0,0,1, r
\end{array}\right.
$$

and these points on $p_{3}$ give the conics $k l=0$ and $l^{2}+r k^{2}=0$. The special pencil of conics is $r k^{2}+\lambda k l+l^{2}=0$. When $r$ is not a square, every conic of the pencil consists of two distinct lines; when $r$ is a square, there are two conics each of which is a line counted twice. This was the difference between planes 14 and 15 that was explained in the earlier paper. Since we have now found all planes which contain $P_{1} P_{2}$, it should follow that plane 15 and this last one with $r$ a square are the same. ${ }^{8}$ To see that they are the

[^4]same, we notice that in the case of plane 15 the points $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are one each on the two degenerate parabolas. Making this change in the case where $a_{4} / a_{3}$ is a square gives the form 15.
(vi) Planes with a line on $V$ that are not $\Sigma$-planes. There are four planes, not $\Sigma$-planes, each of which contains a ruling of $V$ :
19. $k, 0,0,0,0,0,0,0, l, m$.
20. $k, 0,0,0, l, 0,0, k, m, 0$.
21. $k, 0,0,0,0,0, l, k, m, 0$.
22. $k, 0,0,0,0,0,0, k, l, m$.

Plane 19 has the line $k=0$ and the point $l=m=0$ on $V$; any plane with a line and a point on $V$ can be put in the form 19. For the line $P_{2} P_{3}$ determines a pencil of lines in $X$ which may be taken to be in the plane $\sigma=$ $A_{3} A_{4} A_{5}$ with vertex of the pencil at $A_{5}$. The other point $P_{1}$ in $\rho$ and on $V$ determines a line $p_{1}$ in $X$. The line $p_{1}$ cannot intersect the plane $\sigma$ for then $P_{1}, P_{2}$, and $P_{3}$ would all be in a five-space $\Sigma$ determined by the lines of a three-space in $X$ and $\rho$ would be a $\Sigma$-plane. Hence, $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ may be selected on $p_{1}$, and $\rho$ takes the form 19.

Let $\rho$ be a plane, not a $\Sigma$-plane, intersecting $V$ in one line $P_{2} P_{3}$ only, and let $P_{1}$ be a point of $\rho$ not on $V$. There is no more than one $\Sigma$-line in $\rho$ on $P_{1}$; hence there is no more than one line through $P_{1}$ tangent to $V$. Therefore, $\rho$ is in no more than one of the spaces tangent to $V$ at points of $P_{2} P_{3}$.

Suppose $\rho$ is tangent to $V$ at the point $P_{2}$. Then since any tangent is conjugate to any other, we may take $P_{1} P_{2}$ to be

$$
k, 0,0,0, l, 0,0, k, 0,0
$$

The points of the line $P_{2} P_{3}$ image the lines of a pencil in a plane $\sigma$ in $X . \quad P_{1}$ determines the three-space $R_{1}$ in $X ; R_{1}$ does not contain $\sigma$ and hence intersects it in the line $p_{2} . \quad p_{3}$ is a line in $\sigma$ and intersects $R_{1}$ only at its intersection with $p_{2}$. We wish to show that this intersection can be taken to be
$A_{3}$. The line $p_{2}$ is $\left\{\begin{array}{l}0,1,0,0,0 \\ 0,0,1,0,0\end{array}\right.$. The point $P_{1}$ is on $Q_{1} Q_{1}^{\prime}$ where

$$
Q_{1}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0 \quad \text { and } \quad Q_{1}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0
$$

If we take a new $q_{1}^{\prime}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}0, a, b, 0,0 \\ 0,0,0,1,0\end{array}\right.$, we have

$$
Q_{1}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0,0, a, 0, b, 0,0 \quad \text { and } Q_{1}=b, 0,0,0,0,-a, 0,0,0,0
$$

Hence, $Q_{1}^{\prime}$ and $Q_{1}$ can be selected so that $P_{1} P_{2}$ is in the above form and so that $p_{3}$ passes through $A_{3}=0,0,1,0,0$, the intersection of $p_{2}$ and $q_{1}^{\prime}$. Then $A_{5}$ may be taken on $p_{3}$, not in $R_{1} . \rho$ is then in the form $20 ; \rho$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{2}$.

Now suppose $\rho$ intersects $V$ in a line and is not tangent to $V$ at any point
of the line. Let $P_{1}$ be a point of $\rho$ not on $V$; let $P_{2} P_{3}$ be the ruling of $V$; let $\sigma$ and $R_{1}$ be as above. The intersection $q$ of $R_{1}$ and $\sigma$ does not pass through the vertex of the pencil $p_{2} p_{3}$ for then $\rho$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at a point of $P_{2} P_{3}$. Hence, $q$ intersects $p_{2}$ and $p_{3}$ at distinct points. The point $Q$, on $V$, may or may not be such that $Q P_{1}$ is a tangent to $V$. If it is not, then $Q P_{1}$ meets $V$ in a point $Q^{\prime}$. By selecting $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ on $q^{\prime}, A_{3}$ on $p_{2}$ and $q$, $A_{4}$ on $p_{3}$ and $q$, and $A_{5}$ on $p_{2}$ and $p_{3}$, we have the canonical form 22 . This plane is not a $\tau$-plane.

If $Q$ above is on the polar of $P_{1}$, a coordinate system in $R_{1}$ can be selected so that

$$
P_{1}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0 \quad \text { and } \quad Q=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0
$$

The line common to $\sigma$ and $R_{1}$ is $A_{2} A_{3} . A_{5}$ can be taken at the vertex of the pencil $p_{2} p_{3}$, which is not in $R_{1}$. The plane $\rho$ is then plane 21 which is in the space tangent to $V$ at $Q$. This completes the determination of the types of plane in $S$.

## 4. Some collineations of $S$ leaving certain planes unchanged in form

In the determination of the types of plane in $S$ it was necessary to obtain more information about lines than was required to determine the types of line. Likewise, in the determination of types of three-space it will be necessary to have more information about certain of the types of plane. A threespace with certain relations to $V$ can often readily be seen to contain a plane of a certain type. Knowing that a plane of a given type is present, we know that a coordinate system can be selected to exhibit it in a particular form. Usually that can be done in many ways. That it could be done at all was enough to fix a canonical form for the type, but to determine a canonical form for the three-space that will give the plane the canonical form for its type generally will require a special selection of the frame of reference in the plane. It may thus become necessary to know all possible selections of the coordinate system to present a given plane in canonical form. The collineations that were found necessary in classifying the three-spaces are collected in this section.
(i) The plane $k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0, m$. This plane intersects $V$ in the point $P_{3}: k=l=0$ only; it is not a $\tau$-plane and contains no $\Sigma$-line. We ask how much is the freedom of choice of $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ if the form is to remain unchanged.

We note first that the lines $P_{1} P_{3}$ and $P_{2} P_{3}$ are completely determined by the plane's relation to $V$. Let $P=(k, l, m)$ be any point of the plane. For $P$ we have the following:

$$
B_{1}=k^{2}, \quad B_{2}=-l^{2}, \quad B_{3}=k m, \quad B_{4}=l m, \quad B_{5}=k l
$$

The three-space $R$ in $X$ determined by $P$ is $k l x_{1}-l m x_{2}+k m x_{3}+l^{2} x_{4}+$ $k^{2} x_{5}=0$. If $k, l, m$ are given, this defines $R$. If $x_{1}, x_{2}, \cdots, x_{5}$ are given,
this defines a conic in the plane. The point $P_{3}$, being on $V$, is the image of a line in $X$, namely, the line $\left\{\begin{array}{l}0,0,0,1,0 \\ 0,0,0,0,1\end{array}\right.$.

This pencil of points in $X$, which has a special relation to the plane, determines a pencil of conics in the plane, namely, $k^{2}+\lambda l^{2}=0$. The pencil of conics contains the two degenerate parabolas $k^{2}=0$ and $l^{2}=0$, given by $\lambda=0$ and $\lambda=\infty$, respectively. Hence, the lines $k=0$ and $l=0$ are special lines in the plane. If the plane is to have the given form, $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ must be selected on these lines.

If $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are left fixed, the coordinate system can be changed, still leaving the coordinates of $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ unchanged. Transformations $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$ do this. Neither $T_{1}$ nor $T_{2}$ leaves $P_{3}$ unchanged. Hence, if we wish the plane to retain the above form, choice of $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$, necessarily on the special lines, determines the coordinate system excepting that there is left some freedom in the choice of the unit point.

We give the transformation resulting from the choices $P_{1}^{\prime}=P_{1}+a P_{3}$ and $P_{2}^{\prime}=P_{2}+b P_{3}$.

$$
T_{4}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & -b & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-b & -a & b^{2} & -a^{2} & 1 & 0 & a & b & 0 & -a b \\
0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & -b \\
0 & 0 & b & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & -a \\
0 & 0 & 0 & b & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right]
$$

(ii) The plane $k, k, 0,0,0,0, l, m, 0,0$. This is one form of the plane with three points on $V$. A transformation which leaves every point of the plane fixed is

$$
T_{5}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -b & 1 & 0 & a b & -a & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 \\
-c & 0 & 0 & 1 & -a c & 0 & -a & 0 & -a & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & c & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -b c & c & 0 & 0 & -b & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

(iii) The plane $k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, m, 0,0$. This is a form of plane 16 ; it is useful in dealing with three-spaces with two points on $V$. A transformation
which leaves every point of the plane fixed is

$$
T_{6}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & -b & 1 & 0 & a b & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-c & a & 0 & 1 & -a^{2} & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & c & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -b c & c & 0 & -a & -b & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

The points $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$ are obviously special points in the plane, being on $V$; the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ is special, being tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$. A transformation of the plane into itself which keeps the form could only move $P_{2}$ along the line $P_{1} P_{2}$. Such is

$$
T_{7}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
c & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & c & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & b c & c & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & b & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

(iv) The plane $k, l, m, 0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$. The line $P_{1} P_{3}$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$. If the form of the plane is to remain unchanged, $P_{1}$ must remain on that line. We note that $T_{3}$ leaves $P_{3}$ unchanged, and hence $P_{2}$ may be moved along the line $P_{1} P_{2}$. Then if we combine $T_{3}$ with a transformation which moves $P_{1}$ along $P_{1} P_{3}$ and leaves $P_{2}$ fixed, we will have a transformation which leaves the plane in canonical form with $P_{1} P_{2}$ any line not on $P_{3}$, and $P_{2}$ any point, except $P_{1}$, on that line. Even then we can change the coordinate system by applying $T_{1}$ with $a=0$. The following transformation moves $P_{1}$ to $P_{1}^{\prime}=P_{1}+a P_{3}$ and $P_{2}$ to $P_{2}^{\prime}=P_{2}+b P_{3}$.

$$
T_{8}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & -b & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & -b & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & -b \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

(v) The plane $k, l, 0,0,0,0,0,0,0, m$. This is a plane with a ruling and an additional point on $V$; it is not tangent to $V$ at any point of the intersection. The line of $V$ represents a pencil of lines in $X$ with vertex at $A_{1}$; the pencil lies in the plane $A_{1} A_{2} A_{3}$; the other point on $V$ is the image of the line $A_{4} A_{5}$ in $X$. If the form of the plane is left unchanged, the point $A_{1}$, the plane $A_{1} A_{2} A_{3}$, and the line $A_{4} A_{5}$ must be left unchanged. The most general transformation in $X$ is

$$
\left[\begin{array}{lllll}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
a & 1 & b & 0 & 0 \\
c & d & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & e \\
0 & 0 & 0 & f & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

The corresponding transformation in $S$ is

$$
T_{9}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & b & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
d & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & e & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & f & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
a d-c & a-b c & 0 & 0 & 1-b d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & a & a e & 0 & 1 & e & b & b e & 0 \\
0 & 0 & a f & a & 0 & f & 1 & b f & b & 0 \\
0 & 0 & c & c e & 0 & d & d e & 1 & e & 0 \\
0 & 0 & c f & c & 0 & d f & d & f & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1-e f
\end{array}\right] .
$$

(vi) The plane $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k, 0,0$. The line $P_{1} P_{3}$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{3} ; P_{2}$ is an arbitrary point not on $P_{1} P_{3}$. Transformations $T_{2}$ and $T_{3}$ leave the form of the plane unchanged, and $T_{1}$ with $a=0$ does also. The following transformation moves $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ along the lines $P_{1} P_{3}$ and $P_{2} P_{3}$.

$$
T_{10}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-a & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
-a^{2} & a & 0 & 0 & 0 & a b & -a & -b & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

(vii) The plane $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l+m, k, 0,0$. This is a $\tau$-plane with $P_{3}$ on $V ; l+m=0$ is a $\Sigma$-line; there is no line tangent to $V$. The following transformation moves $P_{1}$ along the $\Sigma$-line.
$T_{11}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}d & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a d & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a d \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & d^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ a d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ -a d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a^{2} d & d^{2} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & a d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & d & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -a d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a^{2} d & d & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -a d & -a d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & d\end{array}\right],\left(d=1+a^{2}\right)$.
We shall have use for another transformation, which leaves $P_{1}$ fixed but moves $P_{2}$ along $P_{2} P_{3}$.

$$
T_{12}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & d & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & d & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -b & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right], \quad(d=b+1)
$$

(viii) The plane $k, l, m, 0,-r m, 0, l, k, 0,0$. This plane has no point on $V$; it contains the $\Sigma$-line $P_{1} P_{3}$. If the form of the plane is to remain unchanged, $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$ must remain on the $\Sigma$-line. $P_{3}$ is determined by $P_{1}$, since they are conjugates with respect to the hyperquadric in which $\Sigma$ intersects $V$. The transformation $T_{3}$, which moves $P_{2}$ along the line $P_{1} P_{2}$, leaves $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$ unchanged; $T_{1}$ with $a=0$ also leaves $P_{3}$ unchanged. We give a transformation which moves $P_{1}$ along $P_{1} P_{3}$ and leaves $P_{2}$ fixed. This with $T_{3}$ will allow us to select any line in the plane, except $P_{1} P_{3}$, for $P_{1} P_{2}$. If $P_{1}^{\prime}=$ $P_{1}+a P_{3}$, then $P_{3}^{\prime}=-a P_{1}+P_{3}$.

$$
T_{13}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & a & 0 \\
a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

(ix) The plane $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k+\alpha m, m, 0$. This is a $\tau$-plane, with no point on $V$ if $x^{3}+\alpha x-1$ is irreducible. In determining the canonical form it was necessary to move $P_{2}$ along $P_{1} P_{2}$, to interchange $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$, and to change the unit point; it was not necessary to change the line $P_{1} P_{2}$. This is a $\tau$-plane, and it contains no $\Sigma$-line; any line in it can be taken for $P_{1} P_{2}$. The point $P_{3}$ is determined by $P_{1} P_{2}$. There is only one point on a given line that can serve for $P_{1}$ and give the canonical cubic, because the group of transformations of the line into itself is exactly the group of linear fractional transformations of $x$. In order to show that $P_{1}$ may be taken to be any point in the plane, it is necessary only to show that a change of the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ in the pencil on $P_{1}$, leaving $P_{1}$ fixed, changes the polynomial in $x$. For, since every line has a $P_{1}$ and no point is the $P_{1}$ of more than one line, every point must be the $P_{1}$ of some line. The following transformation has $P_{1}^{\prime}=P_{1}$ and $P_{2}^{\prime}=$ $a P_{2}+P_{3}$.

\[

\]

This transforms the point $P_{2}$ into

$$
-a, \alpha+a^{2}, 0,0,0,-a^{3}-(\alpha a-1)^{2}, a^{2}, a-\alpha(\alpha a-1),-1,0
$$

The point $P_{3}^{\prime}$ is

$$
0,0,0,0,0, a^{3}+(\alpha a-1)^{2}, \alpha,-2 a+a(\alpha a-1), 1,0
$$

The corresponding cubic is

$$
x^{3}-\alpha x^{2}+a(\alpha a-3) x-\left[a^{3}+(\alpha a-1)^{2}\right]=0
$$

Since this cannot be transformed into $x^{3}+\alpha x-1=0$ by a change that leaves $P_{1} P_{2}$ and also the point $P_{1}$ fixed, it follows that $P_{1}$ may be taken to be any point in the plane, and then $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$ may be determined so that the plane has the above canonical form.
(x) The plane $k, l, 0,0,0, m, 0,0,0,0$. This is a $\Sigma$-plane in the five-space determined by the lines in $R: x_{5}=0$; it intersects $V$ in the two lines $l=0$ and $m=0$. The two lines on $V$ determine two pencils of lines in $R$; the planes of the pencils in $R$ intersect in a line which belongs to both pencils. To obtain the above form, $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ are selected at the vertices of the two pencils,
$A_{3}$ in the plane of the pencil with vertex at $A_{1}$, and $A_{4}$ in the plane of the other. $A_{3}$ may be moved about its plane, and likewise $A_{4}$, and also $A_{5}$ may be selected anywhere outside of $R$ without affecting the form of the plane. These changes are made by

$$
\begin{gathered}
T_{15}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-b & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-d & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
b g+d h-f & -g & -h & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
c & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
-a g-c h+e & 0 & 0 & 0 & -g & -h & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
a d-b c & c & -a & 0 & d & -b & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
\delta_{1} & e-c h & a h & -a & f-d h & b h & -b & -h & 1 & 0 \\
\delta_{2} & c g & e-a g & -c & d g & f-b g & -a & g & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right], \\
\delta_{1}=a f-a d h+b c h-b e,
\end{gathered}
$$

(xi) The plane $k, l, m,-m, 0,0, l, k, 0,0$. This plane contains $P_{3}$ on $V$; it contains no special line; any line not on $P_{3}$ can be taken for $P_{1} P_{2}$. We give a transformation which moves $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ along the lines $P_{1} P_{3}$ and $P_{2} P_{3}$ respectively.

$$
T_{16}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
1 & 0 & 0 & a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & -b & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
a & b & -b^{2} & a^{2} & 1 & -b & 0 & 0 & -a & a b \\
0 & 0 & b & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 & -a \\
0 & 0 & 0 & b & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & -a & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 & -b \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right] .
$$

(xii) The plane $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m$. This plane involves the most complex considerations of all because it has no points or lines that are obviously special, and there is no point on $V$ specially related to it as, for example, in the case of a $\tau$-plane. Yet its relation to $V$ does determine a special locus in the plane.

For any point $P=(k, l, m)$ in the plane we have

$$
B_{1}=k^{2}, \quad B_{2}=-l^{2}, \quad B_{3}=k m, \quad B_{4}=l m, \quad B_{5}=m^{2}+k l .
$$

Setting the $B$ 's equal to zero gives five conics in the plane. These conics are linearly independent and determine a unique conic apolar to them. This absolute conic is $C: m^{2}-2 k l=0 . \quad C$ depends only on the plane; it does not depend on the coordinate system, for a change of coordinates would change the conics among conics of the linear set, and $C$ is apolar to all of them. The points $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are on $C$, and $P_{3}$ is the pole of the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ with respect to
$C$. We shall show that $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ can be taken to be any two points of $C$, and then if $P_{3}$ is taken to be the pole of $P_{1} P_{2}$, a coordinate system can be selected so that the plane is in the canonical form.

We look for the relations of $P_{1}, P_{2}$, and $P_{3}$ to $V$ which characterize the canonical form.

$$
\begin{gathered}
P_{1}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0, \quad P_{2}=0,1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0 \\
P_{3}=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1
\end{gathered}
$$

$P_{1} P_{2}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at

$$
M=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0 .
$$

The point $P_{3}$ is on the line joining $M$ to a second point on $V$,

$$
Q_{3}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1 .
$$

$P_{1}$ is on the line joining two points of $V$ :

$$
Q_{1}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0 \quad \text { and } Q_{1}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0
$$

$P_{2}$ is on the line joining

$$
Q_{2}=0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0 \quad \text { and } \quad Q_{2}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0
$$

Corresponding to points $Q_{1}, Q_{1}^{\prime}, Q_{2}, Q_{2}^{\prime}, M, Q_{3}^{\prime}$ on $V$ are lines $q_{1}, q_{1}^{\prime}, q_{2}$ $q_{2}^{\prime}, m, q_{3}^{\prime}$ in $X$. These lines have incidences which have been described earlier (Section 2) for the first five. The sixth line $q_{3}^{\prime}$ intersects $q_{1}^{\prime}$ and $q_{2}^{\prime}$. These relations make it possible to select the frame of reference in $X$ to give the canonical form.

We now prove that $P_{3}$ is the only point in the plane, not on $P_{1} P_{2}$, such that the line joining it to $M$ has a second point on $V$. The points of the line joining $M$ to an arbitrary point of the plane are

$$
k r, l r, 0,0, m r+1,0, l r, k r, 0, m r \quad(r=0,1, \cdots, p-1, \infty)
$$

Conditions that this point be on $V$ are $B_{1}=k^{2} r^{2}=0, \quad B_{2}=l^{2} r^{2}=0$, $B_{3}=k m r^{2}=0, \quad B_{4}=l m r^{2}=0, \quad B_{5}=\left(m^{2}+k l\right) r^{2}+m r=0 . \quad$ If $m=0$, these equations are all quadratic with a double root zero (where they are not identically zero) corresponding to the fact that a line joining $M$ to a point of $P_{1} P_{2}$ is a tangent to $V$. If $m \neq 0$, the last equation has a term of the first degree in $r$; hence the others must be identically zero, and hence $k=l=0$. Therefore, there will be a second point of $V$ on the line only if $(k, l, m)=$ ( $0,0,1$ ).

Any line in the plane is $a k+b l-c m=0$. This line is in the space tangent to $V$ at the point ${ }^{9}$
$M^{\prime}=b c^{2}, a c^{2}, b^{2} c,-a^{2} c,\left(2 a b+c^{2}\right) c, b^{3},-a\left(a b+c^{2}\right),-b\left(a b+c^{2}\right), a^{3},-a b c$.

[^5]Conditions on $P=(k, l, m)$ derived from requiring $M^{\prime}+r P$ to be on $V$ for some $r$ give $P=(b, a, c)$. This is a necessary condition on $P_{3}$ and the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ if the plane is to have the canonical form. A further condition is that $P_{1} P_{2}$ must cut $C$ in two points, i.e., $c^{2}-2 a b$ must be a square, not zero.

Conversely, if $c^{2}-2 a b$ is a square, not zero, and $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are intersections of $a k+b l-c m=0$ with $m^{2}-2 k l=0$, then $Q_{1}, Q_{1}^{\prime}, Q_{2}, Q_{2}^{\prime}$ can be determined so that $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ have the required coordinates. If $P_{3}$ is moved along the line $P_{1} P_{3}$, which is tangent to $C$ at $P_{1}$, and $P_{2}$ is moved along $C$ to the polar of the new $P_{3}$, and if then a coordinate system exists such that $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ have the above form, it will follow that $P_{3}$ may be taken to be any point of the plane outside $C$; the result comes from the fact that $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ enter symmetrically in relation to $P_{3}$, to $C$, and also in relation to the frame of reference in $X$.

We give the transformation which leaves $P_{1}$ fixed, moves $P_{3}$ to $P_{1}+c P_{3}$, $c \neq 0$, and moves $P_{2}$ along $C$.

$$
T_{17}=\left[\begin{array}{cccccccccc}
5 c^{5} & 0 & 6 c^{5} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
4 c^{3} & 6 c^{3} & 6 c^{3} & 0 & 2 c^{3} & 4 c^{3} & 0 & 3 c^{3} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & c^{6} & 0 & 0 & 5 c^{6} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
3 c^{2} & 5 c^{2} & 4 c^{2} & 2 c^{2} & 4 c^{2} & 4 c^{2} & 3 c^{2} & 6 c^{2} & 0 & 6 c^{2} \\
2 c^{4} & 0 & c^{4} & 0 & 4 c^{4} & 4 c^{4} & 0 & 5 c^{4} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 3 c^{7} & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
2 c^{3} & 0 & c^{3} & 0 & c^{3} & 3 c^{3} & 6 c^{3} & 3 c^{3} & 0 & 3 c^{3} \\
0 & 0 & c^{5} & 0 & 0 & 6 c^{5} & 0 & 5 c^{5} & 0 & 0 \\
6 c & 6 c & 5 c & 2 c & 6 c & 3 c & 5 c & 5 c & 3 c & 2 c \\
0 & 0 & 6 c^{4} & 0 & 0 & 3 c^{4} & 0 & 4 c^{4} & 0 & 4 c^{4}
\end{array}\right] \quad \text { (for } p=7 \text { ). }
$$

It may be verified that $T_{17}$ puts

$$
\begin{array}{r}
1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0 \text { into } 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0 \\
1,2 c^{2}, 0,0,2 c, 0,2 c^{2}, 1,0,2 c \text { into } 0,1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0 \\
1,0,0,0, c, 0,0,1,0, c \text { into } 0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1 .
\end{array}
$$

## 5. Three-spaces which intersect $V$ in at least one point

(i) Introduction. The three-spaces most easily dealt with are those having large intersections with $V$; one of the two three-spaces with no point on $V$ requires more work than all the others, and for this reason the two are separated from them.

There is one three-space $S_{3}$ which will not be included in our list because it leads to a group that has been excluded. This $S_{3}$ lies wholly on $V$. Since every pair of points in $S_{3}$ is the image of a pair of intersecting lines in $X$, all of these lines must pass through a point. If this point is taken to be $A_{1}$, then $A_{2}, A_{3}, A_{4}, A_{5}$ may be selected arbitrarily, except that all five $A$ 's must be linearly independent, and then $S_{3}$ will be $k, l, m, n, 0,0,0,0,0,0$. The group of order $p^{11}$ defined by this three-space is given by the additional relations:
$s_{1}=s_{2}=s_{3}=s_{4}=1$; it is the direct product of the metabelian group $\left\{U_{2}, U_{3}, U_{4}, U_{5}\right\}$ of order $p^{10}$ and the cyclic group $\left\{U_{1}\right\}$.
(ii) Three-spaces containing a $\Sigma$-plane cutting $V$ in a nondegenerate conic.

1. $k, 0, m, 0, n, 0,0, l, 0,0$, the ruled quadric $k l+m n=0$ on $V$.
2. $k, l, m, 0, n,-l, 0, k, 0,0$, the quadric $k^{2}+l^{2}+m n=0$ on $V$.
3. $k, l, n, 0,0, l, 0, m, 0,0$, the cone $k m-l^{2}=0$ on $V$.
4. $n, n, 0,0, k, m, 0,0, m, l$, the conic $k l-m^{2}=0, n=0$ and the line $l=m=0$ on $V$.
5. $k, l+n, m, 0, n, n, l, k+n, 0,0$, the conic $k^{2}+k n-n^{2}+m n=0$, $l=0$, and the point $1,1,0,-1$ on $V$.
6. $n, 0,0,0, k, m, 0, n, m, l$, the conic $k l-m^{2}=0, n=0$ on $V$.

If the intersection of $S_{3}$ and $V$ contains a nondegenerate conic, the plane of the conic will be a $\Sigma$-plane. Hence, the spaces in this set all contain $\Sigma$ planes at least; the first three are actually $\Sigma$-three-spaces, in the $\Sigma$ determined by the lines of the three-space $x_{5}=0$ in $X$.

If $S_{3}$ lies in a $\Sigma$, the intersection of $V$ and $\Sigma$ cuts it in a quadric; if the quadric is degenerate, it can be at worst a cone with a single vertex, since we insist that some plane of $S_{3}$ intersect $V$ in a nondegenerate conic. Suppose the quadric is not degenerate and that it has rulings. Let $P_{1}$ be an arbitrary point of the quadric; let $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$ be arbitrary points, one on each of the rulings through $P_{1}$; and let $P_{4}$ be the intersection of two other rulings, one through $P_{2}$ and the other through $P_{3}$. Corresponding to these four points of $V$ are four lines $p_{1}, p_{2}, p_{3}, p_{4}$ in $X . \quad p_{1}$ intersects $p_{2}$ and $p_{3}$ and does not intersect $p_{4} . p_{4}$ intersects $p_{2}$ and $p_{3}$, and $p_{2}$ does not intersect $p_{3} . p_{1}, p_{2}$, and $p_{3}$ determine a three-space, and $p_{4}$ lies in it; this three-space determines in $S$ the $\Sigma$ in which $S_{3}$ lies. We select a frame of reference in $X$ as follows: $A_{1}$ is on $p_{1}$ and $p_{2}$; $A_{2}$ is on $p_{1}$ and $p_{3} ; A_{3}$ is on $p_{2}$ and $p_{4} ; A_{4}$ is on $p_{3}$ and $p_{4} ; A_{5}$ is anywhere outside the three-space already determined. Then $S_{3}$ will have the form 1.

Let $S_{3}$ intersect $V$ in a nondegenerate quadric which has no rulings. $S_{3}$ contains a plane which cuts the quadric in a nondegenerate conic; this plane is a $\Sigma$-plane. Let $P$ be a point of this plane not on $V$; a line joining $P$ to a point of the quadric not in the plane cuts $V$ twice or else is a tangent, and hence the line is a $\Sigma$-line. The quadric and $S_{3}$ are thus seen to be in a $\Sigma$. A coordinate system can be selected so that the plane of the conic is

$$
k, 0, m, 0, n, 0,0, k, 0,0
$$

The three-space in $X$ determined by a point of the plane is $x_{5}=0$. Hence, $S_{3}$ is in the five-space $a_{4}=a_{7}=a_{9}=a_{10}=0$. Any point of $S_{3}$ is

$$
a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0,0
$$

$S_{3}$ contains a point $P_{2}^{\prime}=0, a_{2}, 0,0,0, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0,0$. The polar spaces of $P_{3}=0,0,1,0$ and $P_{4}=0,0,0,1$ with respect to $V$ are respectively $a_{5}=$ $a_{7}=a_{9}=0$ and $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. Both contain $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}^{\prime} . \quad P_{1}$ is not on
$V$, and hence the line $P_{1} P_{2}^{\prime}$ contains a point $P_{2}$ conjugate to $P_{1}$ with respect to $V$. For this point we have $a_{1}+a_{8}=0$, and hence

$$
P_{2}=a_{1}, a_{2}, 0,0,0, a_{6}, 0,-a_{1}, 0,0
$$

A change of coordinates:

$$
A_{1}^{\prime}=a_{2} A_{1}+a_{1} A_{4}, \quad A_{4}^{\prime}=a_{2} A_{1}-a_{6} A_{4}, \quad A_{i}^{\prime}=A_{i}, \quad i \neq 1,4
$$

and a proper choice of the unit point gives $P_{2}=0,1,0,0,0, r, 0,0,0,0, r$ not a square. This is space 2.

Let $S_{3}$ intersect $V$ in a cone, and let the vertex of the cone be $P_{4}$. Every point of $S_{3}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{4}$. Let $\rho$ be a plane which cuts the cone in a conic $C$. Let $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ be points of $C$, and let $P_{3}$ be the pole of $P_{1} P_{2}$ with respect to $C$. Then $p_{1}$ and $p_{2}$ are two skew lines in $X$, and $p_{4}$ intersects both of them. If $A_{1}$ is the intersection of $p_{1}$ and $p_{4}, A_{4}$ the intersection of $p_{2}$ and $p_{4}, A_{2}$ an arbitrary point not $A_{1}$ on $p_{1}$, and $A_{3}$ an arbitrary point not $A_{4}$ on $p_{2}$, we have

$$
\begin{gathered}
P_{1}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0, \quad P_{2}=0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0 \\
P_{4}=0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0
\end{gathered}
$$

The three-space containing $p_{1}$ and $p_{2}$ is $x_{5}=0$. Consequently,

$$
P_{3}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0,0
$$

Since $P_{3}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{4}, a_{5}=0$. Since $P_{1} P_{3}$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}, a_{8}=0$; and since $P_{2} P_{3}$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{2}, a_{1}=0$. By rotating the plane of $C$ on $P_{1} P_{2}$ we may move $P_{3}$ to the point $0, a_{2}, 0,0,0, a_{6}, 0,0,0,0$, and then by a choice of the unit point we may make $a_{2}=a_{6}=1$. This gives 3.

Whenever $S_{3}$ lies in a five-space $\Sigma, S_{3}$ will intersect $V$ in a quadric. We have taken care of all such $S_{3}$ 's except such as contain a plane of $V$. It has seemed desirable to consider $S_{3}$ 's with planes on $V$ separately. The remaining spaces under the present heading all intersect at least one $\Sigma$ in a plane. $S_{3}$ cannot contain a second $\Sigma$-plane, for the intersection of the two planes would contain points not on $V$ and $S_{3}$ would lie in the $\Sigma$ determined by such a point.

Suppose $S_{3}$ contains two points on $V$ besides the points of the conic. Neither of the two points can be in the plane of the conic, since no $\Sigma$-plane intersects $V$ in a conic and an additional point. Denote the line on the two points by $L . \quad L$ intersects the plane of the conic in a point which must be on the conic, for otherwise $S_{3}$ would be in the $\Sigma$ determined by that point. $L$ then has three points on $V$ and hence lies wholly on $V$. If $P_{4}$ is taken to be a point on $L$ not on the conic, $P_{2}$ as the point on $L$ and the conic, $P_{3}$ on the conic, and $P_{1}$ the pole of $P_{2} P_{3}$ with respect to the conic, coordinates can be chosen so that we have 4.

Suppose next that $S_{3}$ contains a conic $C$ and an additional point $P_{4}$ on $V$, but contains no ruling of $V$. Coordinates can be selected so that the plane of $C$ is $k, 0, l, 0, m, 0,0, k, 0,0$. The equation of $C$ is $k^{2}+l m=0$. The points of $C$ are $k l, 0, l^{2}, 0,-k^{2}, 0,0, k l, 0,0$. The lines of $X$ imaged on these points are $\left\{\begin{array}{l}l, 0, k, 0,0 \\ 0, k, 0, l, 0\end{array}\right.$. These lines are rulings of one set of the quadric $x_{1} x_{2}-x_{3} x_{4}=0, x_{5}=0$. Any point of the plane of $C$, not on $C$, determines the three-space $R: x_{5}=0$, which contains the above quadric. $P_{4}$ is not in $R$, but it intersects $R$ in a point. The point of intersection cannot be on the quadric, since $S_{3}$ contains no ruling of $V$. We may take $A_{5}$ to be on $p_{4}$, and the intersection of $p_{4}$ and $R$ to be $a_{4}, a_{7}, a_{9}, a_{10}, 0$; since this point is not on the quadric, $a_{4} a_{7}-a_{9} a_{10} \neq 0 . P_{4}=0,0,0, a_{4}, 0,0, a_{7}, 0, a_{9}, a_{10}$. We show that $S_{3}$ cannot be in the space tangent to $V$ at any of its points. If $B=b_{1}, b_{2}, \cdots, b_{10}$ is a point of $V$ such that the plane $n=0$ of $S_{3}$ is in the tangent space at $B$, it is easily seen that $B=b_{1}, b_{2}, 0,0,0, b_{6}, 0,-b_{1}, 0,0$. The requirement that $P_{4}$ be in the tangent space at $B$ gives $a_{4} a_{7}-a_{9} a_{10}=0$, which is not so. We determine a canonical form for $S_{3}$. Let $K$ be the point in which $p_{4}$ intersects $R$. Through $K$ take a line $t$ in $R$ which intersects the quadric in two points; these points will lie on two distinct rulings of the quadric which are imaged on $V$ on two points of $C$; let these two points be $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$. Denote the pole of $P_{2} P_{3}$ with respect to $C$ by $P_{1}$. The polar space of $P_{1}$ with respect to $V$ does not contain the point $T$, which is the image on $V$ of the line $t$ in $X$, for otherwise $S_{3}$ would lie in the space tangent to $V$ at $T$. Hence, the line joining $P_{1}$ to $T$ intersects $V$ again at a point which we denote by $Q_{1}^{\prime}$. The line $q_{1}^{\prime}$ in $X$ intersects both $p_{2}$ and $p_{3}$, since $P_{1}$ and $T$ are both in the tangent spaces at $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$. The lines $p_{2}, p_{3}, t, q_{1}^{\prime}$, and $p_{4}$ in $X$ are related as follows: $t$ and $q_{1}^{\prime}$ are skew and intersect both $p_{2}$ and $p_{3} ; t$ also intersects $p_{4}$, which is not in the space of $p_{2}$ and $p_{3}$. Denote the intersections of $t$ with $p_{2}$ and $p_{3}$ by $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ respectively, and the intersections of $q_{1}^{\prime}$ with $p_{2}$ and $p_{3}$ by $A_{4}$ and $A_{3}$; select the unit point in $R$ so that $K$ is $1,1,0,0,0$, and select $A_{5}$ on $p_{4}$. Then $S_{3}$ takes the form 5 .

Suppose $S_{3}$ intersects $V$ in the conic $C$ and in no other point. Any point of the plane $\rho$ of the conic, not on $V$, determines the three-space $R$ and the five-space $\Sigma$. Let $R$ be $x_{1}=0$. If $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are chosen on $C$ and $P_{3}$ is the pole of $P_{1} P_{2}$ with respect to $C$, a frame of reference in $X$ can be chosen with $A_{1}$ arbitrary, not in $R$, so that $\rho$ is $0,0,0,0, k, m, 0,0, m, l$. There is a point in $S_{3}$, not on $\rho$, with coordinates $a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, 0, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, 0,0$. If $A_{1}$ is replaced by $A_{1}^{\prime}=1, a, b, c, d$ and the other $A$ 's are left unchanged, this point has new coordinates $a_{1}^{\prime}, \cdots, a_{10}^{\prime}$. The numbers $a, b, c, d$ can be selected so that $a_{6}^{\prime}=a_{9}^{\prime}$ and $a_{7}^{\prime}=0 . \quad S_{3}$ contains a point

$$
P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, 0,0,0, a_{8}, 0,0
$$

(dropping the accents). Since $P_{4}$ is not on $V, a_{8} \neq 0$, and not both $a_{1}$ and $a_{4}$ are zero. Any point in $S_{3}$ is

$$
P=a_{1} n, a_{2} n, a_{3} n, a_{4} n, k, m, 0, a_{8} n, m, l .
$$

For $P$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=a_{3} k n-a_{2} m n+a_{1} a_{8} n^{2} \\
& B_{2}=a_{4} k n+a_{1} m n \\
& B_{3}=a_{1} l n+a_{4} m n \\
& B_{4}=a_{2} l n-a_{3} m n+a_{4} a_{8} n^{2} \\
& B_{5}=k l-m^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The conditions that $P$ be on $V$ are (1) $n=0, k l-m^{2}=0$, which gives $C$, or (2) $n \neq 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
a_{3} k-a_{2} m+a_{1} a_{8} n & =0 \\
a_{4} k & =0 \\
a_{1} l+a_{4} m & =0 \\
a_{2} l-a_{3} m+a_{4} a_{8} n & =0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

The last three equations have a solution $k, l, m, n$ not all zeros. $n \neq 0$ requires either $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4} \neq 0$ or $a_{4}=0$. Suppose $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4} \neq 0, a_{4}=0$; then $k, l, m, n=a_{1} a_{8}, 0,0,-a_{3}$, and $a_{3} \neq 0$. This is a solution of the four equations, and hence gives a point on $V$ not on $C$. This is not possible with this $S_{3}$. Suppose $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4} \neq 0, a_{4} \neq 0$. Then if $a_{1} \neq 0$, the solution of the last three equations is $a_{1}, a_{4}^{2} / a_{1},-a_{4},-\left(a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4}\right) / a_{1} a_{8}$ which also satisfies the first equation. If $a_{1}=0$, the solution of the last three has $n \neq 0$ and satisfies the first, and hence is not suitable. Then suppose $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4}=0$, $a_{4}=0$. Since $P_{4}$ is not on $V, a_{1} \neq 0$ and hence $a_{3}=0$. A solution of the last three equations is $k, 0,0,1, k$ arbitrary, and this does not satisfy the first. Hence in this case

$$
P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, 0,0,0,0,0, a_{8}, 0,0, \quad a_{1} a_{8} \neq 0
$$

$R_{4}$ intersects $R$ in the plane $x_{1}=x_{5}=0$. We note also that $S_{3}$ contains a $\tau$-plane $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ tangent to $V$ at the point $P_{1}$ which is on $C$. If $a_{2}$ is not zero, it may be made so by moving $A_{2}$ to $A_{2}^{\prime}=A_{2}+a_{2} A_{3} / a_{1}$, and $A_{5}$ to $A_{5}^{\prime}=$ $-a_{2} A_{4} / a_{1}+A_{5}$. Then proper choice of the unit point puts $S_{3}$ in the form 6.

There remains the possibility that $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4}=0, a_{4} \neq 0$. We show that this is not different from the space just considered, showing first that it contains a plane tangent to $V$ at a point of $C$.

The space tangent to $V$ at the point $B=b_{1}, \cdots, b_{10}$ is ${ }^{10}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& b_{8} x_{1}-b_{6} x_{2}+b_{5} x_{3}+b_{3} x_{5}-b_{2} x_{6}+b_{1} x_{8}=0 \\
& b_{9} x_{1}-b_{7} x_{2}+b_{5} x_{4}+b_{4} x_{5}-b_{2} x_{7}+b_{1} x_{9}=0
\end{aligned}
$$

[^6]\[

$$
\begin{aligned}
& b_{10} x_{1}-b_{7} x_{3}+b_{6} x_{4}+b_{4} x_{6}-b_{3} x_{7}+b_{1} x_{10}=0 \\
& b_{10} x_{2}-b_{9} x_{3}+b_{8} x_{4}+b_{4} x_{8}-b_{3} x_{9}+b_{2} x_{10}=0 \\
& b_{10} x_{5}-b_{9} x_{6}+b_{8} x_{7}+b_{7} x_{8}-b_{6} x_{9}+b_{5} x_{10}=0
\end{aligned}
$$
\]

Its intersection with $S_{3}$ is

$$
\begin{aligned}
b_{3} k \quad-b_{2} m+\left(a_{8} b_{1}+a_{3} b_{5}-a_{2} b_{6}+a_{1} b_{8}\right) n & =0, \\
b_{4} k \quad+b_{1} m+\left(a_{4} b_{5}-a_{2} b_{7}+a_{1} b_{9}\right) n & =0, \\
b_{1} l+b_{4} m+\left(a_{4} b_{6}-a_{3} b_{7}+a_{1} b_{10}\right) n & =0, \\
b_{2} l-b_{3} m+\left(a_{8} b_{4}+a_{4} b_{8}-a_{3} b_{9}+a_{2} b_{10}\right) n & =0, \\
b_{10} k+b_{5} l-\left(b_{6}+b_{9}\right) m+a_{8} b_{7} n & =0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

If this intersection is a plane, the rank of the matrix of coefficients must be 1. This requires that $b_{1}=b_{2}=b_{3}=b_{4}=0$. If the plane is not $n=0$, then the coefficients of $n$ in the first four equations are zero. This gives four linear equations in $b_{6}, \cdots, b_{10}$. Two obvious solutions are

$$
a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, 0,0,0 \quad \text { and } \quad 0,0, a_{1}, 0, a_{2}, a_{3}
$$

On the line joining them is $-a_{1} a_{2},-a_{1} a_{3}, 0,0, a_{2} a_{4}, a_{3} a_{4}$ which is also a solution. The point is in the plane $\rho$ since $a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2} a_{4}=0$, and is also on $C$. The $\tau$-plane, which is given by the last equation above, passes through $P_{4}$, since $b_{7}$ is zero. If now this point of $C$ is selected for $P_{1}$ and coordinates are determined as before, $P_{4}$ will have $a_{3}=a_{4}=0$ since $P_{4}$ is in the tangent space at $P_{1}$. This completes the consideration of $S_{3}$ 's with a nondegenerate conic on $V$.
(iii) Three-spaces with a plane on $V$.
7. $k, l, m, 0, n, 0,0,0,0,0$.
8. $k, l, m, 0,0,0, n, 0,0,0$.
9. $k, l, m, 0, n, 0,0,0,0, n$.
$9^{\prime} . \quad k, l, m, n, n, 0,0,0,0,0 .{ }^{11}$
10. $k, l, 0,0, m, 0,0,0,0, n$.
11. $k, l, 0,0, m, n, 0,0, n, 0$.

The planes of $V$ are of two types: (1) planes whose points represent the lines of a plane in $X$, and (2) planes whose points represent the lines of a bundle. In the first four spaces above, the plane $n=0$ is of the second type; in the other two the only plane on $V$ is of the first type. Space 7 has two planes on $V$; space 8 has a plane and a line; spaces 9 and $9^{\prime}$ intersect $V$ only in a plane. Space $9^{\prime}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at each point of $P_{1} P_{2}$; space 9 is not a $\tau$-space. Space 11 is a $\tau$-space, and 10 is not.

[^7]Suppose $S_{3}$ contains a plane $\rho$ of the second type. The points of $\rho$ represent the lines of a bundle in $X$; these lines lie in a three-space $R$. The vertex of the bundle may be taken to be $A_{1}$, and $A_{2}, A_{3}, A_{4}$ may be taken on any three independent lines of the bundle. Then $\rho$ will take the form of $n=0$ in $7,8,9,9^{\prime}$. If $S_{3}$ contained another plane of the second type, their line of intersection would represent the lines of a pencil common to the two bundles, and so the two bundles would have the same vertex and $S_{3}$ would lie on $V$. This possibility has been dealt with. So a second plane on $V$ must be of the first type. This second plane intersects $\rho$ in a line, and hence its points represent the lines of a plane in $X$ which lies in $R$ and passes through $A_{1}$. $S_{3}$ is therefore in the $\Sigma$ determined by $R$. The plane in $R$ may be taken to be $A_{1} A_{2} A_{3}$. If $A_{5}$ is selected to be any point not in $R, S_{3}$ takes the form 7. This is a $\Sigma$-space; the two planes constitute the degenerate quadric in which $S_{3}$ intersects $V$.

Suppose $S_{3}$ contains $\rho$ and a point $P_{4}$ on $V$ and not on $\rho$. The line $p_{4}$ is not in $R$, for if it were, $S_{3}$ would be a $\Sigma$-space and would intersect $V$ in a quadric consisting of two planes since it contains $\rho$ and an additional point. Hence, $p_{4}$ intersects $R$ in a point. The point cannot be $A_{1}$, for then $S_{3}$ would lie wholly on $R$. The point may be taken to be $A_{2}$. $A_{5}$ may be taken on $p_{4}$, and then $S_{3}$ has the form 8. This space intersects $V$ in the plane $\rho$ and the line $l=m=0$.

Any other $S_{3}$ which contains $\rho$ can have no further point on $V$. Let $S_{3}$ contain $\rho$ and a point $P_{4}$ not on $V . \quad P_{4}$ determines a three-space $R_{4}$ in $X . \quad R_{4}$ and $R$ cannot coincide, for then $S_{3}$ would be a $\Sigma$-space intersecting $V$ in a quadric consisting of the plane counted twice, and $P_{4}$ would be in each space tangent to $V$ at a point of $\rho$. There is no such point not on $V$. Therefore $R_{4}$ intersects $R$ in a plane $\sigma$. If $\sigma$ does not pass through $A_{1}$, the plane $\pi$ on $V$ whose points represent the lines of $\sigma$ does not intersect $\rho$. The polar of $P_{4}$ with respect to $V$ intersects $\pi$ in a line. If $Q_{4}$ is selected in $\pi$ not on the polar of $P_{4}$, then the line $P_{4} Q_{4}$ will intersect $V$ in a second point $Q_{4}^{\prime}$. $q_{4}$ lies in $\sigma$, and $q_{4}^{\prime}$, which lies in $R_{4}$, intersects $\sigma . \quad A_{2}$ and $A_{3}$ may be taken on $q_{4}, A_{4}$ on $q_{4}^{\prime}$ and $\sigma$, and $A_{5}$ on $q_{4}^{\prime}$. Then $S_{3}$ will take the form 9 .

Next, suppose the plane $\sigma$ of the last paragraph passes through $A_{1}$. The planes $\rho$ and $\pi$ will intersect in a line $\lambda_{1}$. The polar of $P_{4}$ intersects $\pi$ in a line $\lambda_{2}$. Suppose $\lambda_{1}$ and $\lambda_{2}$ coincide. Then the point $P_{4}$ is in each tangent space to $V$ at a point of $\lambda_{1}$ which we may take to be $P_{1} P_{2}$. It then follows that $P_{4}=0,0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0,0$. A choice of the unit point puts $S_{3}$ in the form $9^{\prime}$. This space is then tangent to $V$ at every point of $P_{1} P_{2}$.

Space 9 is not in the space tangent to $V$ at any point of $V$; however, to show that 9 and $9^{\prime}$ are different, we need only to note that in 9 the point $P_{4}$ is not in the space tangent to $V$ at any point of $\rho$.

There is one further possibility to consider. If the lines $\lambda_{1}$ and $\lambda_{2}$ in the plane $\pi$ do not coincide, they intersect in a point which we may take to be $P_{1} . \quad P_{4}$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$; hence $P_{4}=$
$0,0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, 0,0,0$. By examining $S_{3}$ for points on $V$, it is found that unless $a_{7}=0$ there is a point $k, l, m, n=0, a_{4} a_{5}, a_{4} a_{6}, a_{7}$ on $V$ and not on $\rho$. In that case the space is 8 with an additional line on $V$; if $a_{7}=0$ and $a_{6} \neq 0, P_{4}$ can be selected so that $\lambda_{1}$ and $\lambda_{2}$ coincide, showing $S_{3}$ to be $9^{\prime}$.

An $S_{3}$ which contains a plane on $V$ and is not one of the foregoing contains a plane of the first type. A coordinate system can be chosen so that the plane is $n=0$ of 10 and $11, A_{1}, A_{2}$, and $A_{3}$ being arbitrary independent points of the plane $\sigma$ in $X$ whose lines are imaged on the plane $\rho$ in $S_{3}$. If $P_{4}$ is a point of $S_{3}$ on $V$ and not in $\rho$, then the line $p_{4}$ in $X$ may or may not intersect $\sigma$. If it intersects $\sigma$, we have $S_{3}$ in a five-space $\Sigma$ given by a three-space in $X ; S_{3}$ then intersects $V$ in two planes, giving 7 , or else lies wholly on $V$. If $p_{4}$ does not intersect $\sigma, A_{4}$ and $A_{5}$ may be selected on $p_{4}$ and we have 10.

Finally, suppose $S_{3}$ contains the plane $\rho$ of the last paragraph and no other point of $V$. Let $P_{4}$ be a point of $S_{3}$ not on $\rho$. The three-space $R_{4}$ intersects $\sigma$ in a line, for if $\sigma$ were in $R_{4}, S_{3}$ would be in the five-space determined by $R_{4}$ and would be 7. This line of intersection of $\sigma$ and $R$ is imaged on $V$ in a point of $\rho$ which is such that the line joining it to $P_{4}$ is tangent to $V$, being in a $\Sigma$ and having no other point on $V$. If $Q_{4}$ is selected in $R_{4}$ so that $q_{4}$ intersects the above line, then $q_{4}^{\prime}$ will intersect the above line also. These intersections may be taken to be $A_{2}$ and $A_{3}$, respectively. If then $A_{4}$ is taken on $q_{4}$ and $A_{5}$ on $q_{4}^{\prime}, S_{3}$ will have the form 11.

We have considered all the possibilities for $S_{3}$ with a plane on $V$.
(iv) Three-spaces containing at least two rulings but no plane of $V$.
12. $k, l, 0,0,0, m, 0,0,0, n$.
13. $k, l, 0, n, 0, m, n, 0,0,0$.
14. $k, l, 0,0,0, m, 0,0, n, n$.
15. $k, l, 0, n, 0, m, 0, n, 0,0$.
16. $k, l, 0, n, 0, m, n, n, 0,0$.
17. $k, l, 0,0, n, m, 0,0,0, n$.
18. $k, l, 0, n, n, m, 0,0,0,0$.

The first two have three rulings on $V$; in 13 the rulings pass through a point; in 12 they do not. In each of the rest there are two intersecting rulings; 14 contains one additional point and the others none. 15 and 18 are $\tau$-spaces; 16 and 17 are not. 18 is in the space tangent to $V$ at a point of intersection with $V ; 15$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at a point not in $S_{3}$. The distinction between 16 and 17 is more difficult; it is shown at the end of this section.

If $S_{3}$ contains rulings of $V$ but no planes or nondegenerate conics, the number of rulings cannot be greater than three since otherwise $S_{3}$ would contain planes with four or more discrete points on $V$. If $S_{3}$ contains three rulings of $V$, each ruling must intersect another for otherwise $S_{3}$ would contain planes on one ruling intersecting $V$ in two additional points and no such planes exist.

Suppose $S_{3}$ contains three rulings which do not pass through a point. Denote the rulings by $l_{1}, l_{2}$, and $l_{3}$, and let $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ intersect. $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ are images of two pencils of lines in $X$ whose planes have a line in common. The planes of the pencils lie in a three-space $R$. An obvious choice of the coordinate system in $X$ gives the plane $l_{1} l_{2}$ the form of the plane $n=0$ in the spaces above. The line $l_{3}$ intersects one of the lines $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$; we may assume the intersection to be $P_{3}$. Any point on $l_{3}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$, and hence its coordinates satisfy $a_{2}=a_{4}=a_{9}=0$; and since it is a point of $V$,

$$
a_{1} a_{8}+a_{3} a_{5}=0, \quad a_{1} a_{10}-a_{3} a_{7}=0, \quad a_{5} a_{10}+a_{7} a_{8}=0
$$

Hence, $a_{3} / a_{1}=a_{10} / a_{7}=-a_{8} / a_{5}=r$. The line in $X$ which is imaged on this point is $\left\{\begin{array}{l}a_{1}, 0,-a_{5}, 0,-a_{7} \\ 0,1,0, r, 0\end{array}\right.$. The lines $p_{1}, p_{2}, p_{3}$ are

$$
p_{1}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
1,0,0,0,0 \\
0,1,0,0,0
\end{array}, \quad p_{2}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
1,0,0,0,0 \\
0,0,1,0,0
\end{array}, \quad p_{3}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0,1,0,0,0 \\
0,0,0,1,0
\end{array}\right.\right.\right.
$$

A change of coordinates: $A_{i}^{\prime}=A_{i}, i=1,2,3, \quad A_{4}^{\prime}=(1 / r) A_{2}+A_{4}, \quad A_{5}^{\prime}=$ $a_{1} A_{1}-a_{5} A_{3}-a_{7} A_{5}$ leaves $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ unchanged, but makes the point on $l_{3}$ take the form $P_{4}=0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1 . \quad S_{3}$ has the form 12.

When $S_{3}$ contains three rulings which pass through a point, $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ may be taken as above, and the third ruling passes through $P_{1}$. For any point $P_{4}$ on this ruling, we have $a_{8}=a_{9}=a_{10}=0$, and

$$
a_{2} a_{6}-a_{3} a_{5}=0, \quad a_{2} a_{7}-a_{4} a_{5}=0, \quad a_{3} a_{7}-a_{4} a_{6}=0
$$

From this $a_{5} / a_{2}=a_{6} / a_{3}=a_{7} / a_{4}=r . \quad P_{4}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}1, r, 0,0,0 \\ 0,0, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}\end{array}\right.$. A change of coordinates: $A_{i}^{\prime}=A_{i}, i=1, \cdots, 4, A_{5}^{\prime}=a_{2} A_{3}+a_{3} A_{4}+a_{4} A_{5}$ and a proper selection of the unit point give the form 13.

A three-space $S_{3}$ containing two skew lines $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ which are rulings of $V$ has three or more lines which are rulings of $V$. The lines $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ determine two pencils of lines in $X$ lying in two planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$. If the planes intersect in a line, they lie in a three-space, and $S_{3}$ is a $\Sigma$-space. $S_{3}$ is of the form 1 and intersects $V$ in a nondegenerate ruled quadric. If $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$ intersect in a point, that point cannot be the vertex of either pencil, for otherwise one line of one pencil would intersect every line of the other and $S_{3}$ would contain a plane and a line of $V$; it would be 7 or 8 . The remaining possibility allows us to take the pencils in the planes $A_{1} A_{2} A_{4}$ and $A_{1} A_{3} A_{5}$ with vertices at $A_{2}$ and $A_{3}$. Then $S_{3}$ is $k, l, 0,0,0, m, 0,0, n, 0$ which has three rulings and is 12 .

The remaining $S_{3}$ 's in this section contain two rulings, and the two rulings intersect. The plane of $S_{3}$ containing the rulings is the plane $n=0$ above. We designate this $\Sigma$-plane by $\rho$ and the corresponding three-space in $X$ by $R$.

Let $S_{3}$ contain an additional point $P_{4}$ on $V$. The line $p_{4}$ intersects $R$ in a point. This point is not in either of the planes determined by the lines of $\rho$ on $V$, for if $p$ were the line of the pencil through that point, $P P_{4}$ would be a
pencil of points on $V$ representing the pencil of lines $p p_{4}$, and $S_{3}$ would contain a third line of $V$. A line may be taken through the intersection of $p_{4}$ and $R$ intersecting the planes of the two pencils in points which may be taken for $A_{3}$ and $A_{4}$ without changing the coordinates of $P_{1}, P_{2}$, or $P_{3}$. Then $A_{5}$ may be selected on $p_{4}$ not in $R . \quad S_{3}$ becomes 14 .

Any other $S_{3}$ which contains two rulings of $V$ contains the plane $n=0$ above and a point

$$
P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, a_{10}
$$

To this $S_{3}$ we apply transformation $T_{15}$ (page 658). This transforms $\rho$ into itself, and transforms $P_{4}$ into $P_{4}^{\prime}=a_{1}^{\prime}, \cdots, a_{10}^{\prime}$. There is in $S_{3}$ a point for which $a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{6}^{\prime}=0$, and

$$
\begin{array}{cc}
a_{3}^{\prime}=a_{3}-a_{4} h-a_{8} a+a_{9} a h+a_{10}(e-a f), & a_{4}^{\prime}=a_{4}-a_{9} a-a_{10} c \\
a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{5}-a_{7} g+a_{8} d+a_{9}(f-d h)+a_{10} d g, & a_{7}^{\prime}=a_{7}-a_{9} b-a_{10} a \\
a_{8}^{\prime}=a_{8}-a_{9} h+a_{10} g, \quad a_{9}^{\prime}=a_{9}, & a_{10}^{\prime}=a_{10}
\end{array}
$$

(a) Suppose $a_{9} a_{10} \neq 0$. Then since $b$ appears only in $a_{7}^{\prime}, c$ only in $a_{4}^{\prime}, d$ in $a_{5}^{\prime}$, and $e$ in $a_{3}^{\prime}$, we may make $a_{3}^{\prime}=a_{4}^{\prime}=a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}=a_{8}^{\prime}=0$ by selecting $a, f, g, h$, to satisfy $a_{8}-a_{9} h+a_{10} g=0$ and solving for $b, c, d$, and $e$. This gives 14 again.
(b) Suppose $a_{9}=0, a_{10} \neq 0 . \quad a$ and $g$ can be selected to make $a_{7}^{\prime}=a_{8}^{\prime}=0$; then if $g \neq 0, d, c, e$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{4}^{\prime}=a_{3}^{\prime}=0$. This is 12 again. If $g=0$, we get $P_{4}=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1$, which is 17 .
(c) Suppose $a_{9} \neq 0, a_{10}=0 . \quad b$ and $h$ can be selected to make $a_{7}^{\prime}=a_{8}^{\prime}=0$; then $f$ and $a$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{4}^{\prime}=0 . \quad a_{3}^{\prime}$ is then determined; it cannot be zero since $P_{4}$ is not on $V$, but a choice of the unit point will make $a_{3}^{\prime}=a_{9}^{\prime}$. We shall postpone the identification of $S_{3}: k, l, n, 0,0, m, 0,0, n, 0$.
(d) Suppose $a_{9}=a_{10}=0$.
(i) $a_{7} a_{8} \neq 0 . \quad a_{3}^{\prime}$ and $a_{5}^{\prime}$ can be made zero. $a_{4}^{\prime}, a_{7}^{\prime}, a_{8}^{\prime}$ cannot be changed. We have the possibilities:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P_{4}=0,0,0, a_{4}, 0,0, a_{7}, a_{8}, 0,0 . \quad \text { This is space } 16 . \\
& P_{4}=0,0,0,0,0,0, a_{7}, a_{8}, 0,0
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) $a_{7}=0, a_{8} \neq 0 . d$ and $a$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{3}^{\prime}=0$.

$$
P_{4}=0,0,0,1,0,0,0,1,0,0 .
$$

(iii) $a_{7} \neq 0, a_{8}=0 . g$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$. Then if $a_{4} \neq 0, a_{3}^{\prime}$ can be made zero, and $P_{4}$ is on $V$. Hence $a_{4}=0$ and

$$
P_{4}=0,0,1,0,0,0,1,0,0,0 .
$$

(iv) $a_{7}=a_{8}=0$. Then $a_{4} \neq 0$ since $R_{4}$ is not $R . \quad a_{5} \neq 0$, since $P_{4}$ is not on $V . \quad a_{3}^{\prime}$ can be made zero. $\quad S_{3}$ is 18 .

The transformation $T_{15}$ is the most general collineation of $X$ that leaves the form of $\rho$ unchanged and also leaves $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ unchanged. A collineation which interchanges $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$, and of course interchanges the pencils with vertices at $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$, leaves $\rho$ unchanged. If $A_{3}$ and $A_{4}$ are interchanged as well as $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$, the pencils will be interchanged. This transformation puts the space of (c) above into that of (b); it puts the second space of (d, i) into the space of (d, ii), which is 15 ; and it puts the space of (d, iii) into that of (d, iv).

To distinguish between spaces 16 and 17 we note that any point $k, l, m, n$ of 16 determines in $X$ the three-space

$$
n^{2} x_{1}-n^{2} x_{2}+m n x_{3}+\ln x_{4}+(k n-l m) x_{5}=0
$$

any point of 17 determines the three-space

$$
n^{2} x_{1}-\ln x_{2}+k n x_{3}-\operatorname{lm} x_{5}=0
$$

All the spaces in $X$ determined by points of 16 pass through $1,1,0,0,0$, which is a point of the special line, the line in both pencils determined by the intersections of $S_{3}$ and $V$. All the spaces in $X$ determined by points of 17 pass through $0,0,0,1,0$, which is not on the special line.
(v) Three-spaces containing one ruling of $V$.
19. $m, 0,0, k, 0,0, l, n, k, l$.
20. $k, l, 0,0,0, n, 0,0, n, m$.
$20^{\prime} . \quad k, l, 0, n, n, 0,0,0,0, m$.
$20^{\prime \prime} . \quad k, l, 0, n, n, n, 0,0,0, m$.
21. $k, l, m, n, 0, r n, m, 0,0,0$.
$21^{\prime} . \quad k, l, m, n, m, n, 0,0,0,0$.
22. $k, l, 0,0,0, n, m, m, r n, 0$.
23. $\quad k, l, m, 0, m, 0, n, n, 0,0$.
24. $k, l, 0,0, n, 0, m, m, 0,-r n$.
25. $\quad k, l, m, 0, n, 0,0,0, m, n$.
26. $k, l, n, 0,0,0, m, m, n, 0$.
27. $k, l, m, n, 0,0, m, n, 0,0$.

Each $r$ above is a not-square.
Space 19 has a ruling and two points on $V$. Only spaces $20,20^{\prime}$, and $20^{\prime \prime}$ have the ruling and one additional point on $V$; space 20 contains a line tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$; the other two do not have such a tangent; space $20^{\prime}$ contains the $\Sigma$-plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{4}$; space $20^{\prime \prime}$ contains no $\Sigma$-plane. Spaces 21 and $21^{\prime}$ are in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}, 21^{\prime}$ having a plane tangent to $V$ at $P_{2}, 21$ having no such plane; space 22 is not in a space tangent to $V$ at a point of $P_{1} P_{2}$; it is in the space tangent to $V$ at a point not in it; none of the others is a $\tau$-space. To distinguish among the remaining five we state some geometric facts that are obviously sufficient, and then to show how these facts may be established we carry out in detail the argument for space 23.

In space 23 every plane on $P_{1}$ is a $\tau$-plane, and every line in $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ is tangent to $V$ at its intersection with $P_{1} P_{2}$. The space 24 contains a $\tau$-plane $n=0$, which is in the space tangent to $V$ at $0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$; it contains a pencil of $\tau$-planes on $P_{3} P_{4} ; P_{3} P_{4}$ is a $\Sigma$-line which does not intersect the ruling. All the $\tau$-planes pass through $P_{3}$, but not every plane on $P_{3}$ is a $\tau$-plane. Space 25 contains a pencil of $\tau$-planes on $P_{2} P_{3}$ and no others. Space 26 contains a pencil of $\tau$-planes on $P_{1} P_{2}$; the plane $m=0$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{2}$; there is no plane tangent at any other point of $P_{1} P_{2}$. Space 27 contains a pencil of $\tau$-planes on $P_{1} P_{2} ; m=0$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{2}$, and $n=0$ at $P_{1}$.

We now establish the facts stated for space 23. Let $B=b_{1}, b_{2}, \cdots, b_{10}$ be a point of $V$. The space tangent to $V$ at $B$ is given on page 664. Substituting in these equations the coordinates of a point in space 23, we get five linear equations in $k, l, m, n$ with the following matrix of coefficients:

$$
M=\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
b_{8} & -b_{6} & b_{3}+b_{5} & b_{1} \\
b_{9} & -b_{7} & b_{4} & -b_{2} \\
b_{10} & 0 & -b_{7} & -b_{3} \\
0 & b_{10} & -b_{9} & b_{4} \\
0 & 0 & b_{10} & b_{7}+b_{8}
\end{array}\right]
$$

If $S_{3}$ were a $\tau$-space, it would be possible to select $B$ so that the rank of $M$ would be zero; this would require all the $b_{i}$ 's to be zero. Hence, $S_{3}$ is not a $\tau$-space. If the rank of $M$ is one, the space tangent to $V$ at the point $B$ will intersect $S_{3}$ in a plane. This requires $b_{4}=b_{7}=b_{8}=b_{9}=b_{10}=0$; hence all the $\tau$-planes pass through $P_{1}$. In addition, we should have either (a) $b_{6}=0$ and $b_{3}+b_{5}=0$, or (b) $b_{2}=b_{3}=0$. In case (a) the $\tau$-plane is $n=0$; it is a $\Sigma$-plane. In case (b) the $\tau$-plane is $-b_{6} l+b_{5} m+b_{1} n=0$. Since $b_{1}, b_{5}, b_{6}$ are arbitrary, every plane on $P_{1}$ is a $\tau$-plane.

We now show that the above are the only three-spaces meeting $V$ only in one ruling and possibly some isolated points. $S_{3}$ can have no more than two isolated points on $V$, for if it had three, the plane on them would intersect the ruling or contain it, and no such plane exists. If $S_{3}$ contains two points of $V$ besides the ruling, the line joining the two points must be skew to the ruling.

Let $S_{3}$ contain the ruling $P_{1} P_{2}$ and the two points $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ on $V$. Then in $X$ the lines $p_{3}$ and $p_{4}$ are skew to each other, and both are skew to the plane of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$. The lines $p_{3}$ and $p_{4}$ determine a three-space $R$ which intersects the plane $p_{1} p_{2}$ in a line $\lambda$. The line $\lambda$ may belong to the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$, or it may not. If $\lambda$ does not belong to the pencil, it intersects the two lines $p_{1}$ and $p_{2}$ in two distinct points, $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$ respectively. The plane $p_{3} O_{1}$ intersects $p_{4}$ in a point we take to be $A_{3}$, and $A_{3} O_{1}$ intersects $p_{3}$ in a point we take to be $A_{1}$. By means of $O_{2}$ we determine $A_{4}$ on $p_{4}$ and $A_{2}$ on $p_{3}$. $O_{1}$ may be taken to be $A_{1}+A_{3}$, and $O_{2}$ to be $A_{2}+A_{4} . A_{5}$ may be taken to be the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$. Then $S_{3}$ will be 19 .

If $\lambda$ belongs to the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$, we may suppose that it coincides with $p_{1}$. We may take $O_{1}$ to be the vertex of the pencil and $O_{2}$ any other point on $p_{1}$.

We may proceed as above and finally take $A_{5}$ to be a point of $p_{2}$. Then $S_{3}$ will have the form

$$
k+m, 0, k, l,-k, 0,0, k+n, l, 0 .
$$

It is easy to verify that this $S_{3}$ has a conic and a line on $V$ and hence is space 4.
We consider an $S_{3}$ which intersects $V$ only in the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ and the additional point $P_{3}$. In $X$ the plane of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ is skew to the line $p_{3}$. The plane of the pencil may be taken as $A_{1} A_{2} A_{3}$, with $A_{1}$ the vertex of the pencil, and $A_{4}$ and $A_{5}$ may be taken on $p_{3}$. The plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ will then have the form $k, l, 0,0,0,0,0,0,0, m$. In $S_{3}$ there is the point

$$
P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0
$$

The space tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$ does not intersect the line $P_{1} P_{2}$, so its intersection with $S_{3}$ will be the line $P_{3} P_{4}$ if $a_{5}=0$, or will be $P_{3}$ alone if $a_{5} \neq 0$. The space tangent to $V$ at a point of $P_{1} P_{2}$ does not contain $P_{3}$, and hence its intersection with $S_{3}$ will be at most the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{4}$, but may be only the line $P_{1} P_{2}$.

Now suppose $a_{5}=0$, so that $P_{3} P_{4}$ is a tangent. Conditions that $P_{1} P_{2} P_{4}$ be tangent to $V$ at the point $a P_{1}+b P_{2}$ are

$$
a_{8} a-a_{8} b=0, \quad a_{9} a-a_{7} b=0
$$

If $a$ and $b$ exist so that these equations are satisfied we must have $a_{6} a_{9}$ $a_{7} a_{8}=0$. In that case $S_{3}$ has an additional point ${ }^{12}$ on $V$. So an $S_{3}$ with only a line and a point on $V$, with a line tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$, has $P_{4}$ with $a_{6} a_{9}-$ $a_{7} a_{8} \neq 0$. The three-space $R_{4}$, determined by $P_{4}$, does not contain $A_{1}$. Hence the intersection of $R_{4}$ and $p_{1} p_{2}$, which is a line, may be taken to be $A_{2} A_{3}$; we denote the line by $q_{4}$. The corresponding point $Q_{4}$ on $V$ is such that $P_{4} Q_{4}$ intersects $V$ in a second point unless it is a tangent. Suppose $P_{4} Q_{4}$ is a tangent. Then since $Q_{4}=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0, P_{4}$ must have $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. Since $a_{6} a_{9}-a_{7} a_{8} \neq 0$, we may select

$$
A_{4}^{\prime}=a_{6} A_{4}+a_{7} A_{5} \quad \text { and } \quad A_{5}^{\prime}=a_{8} A_{4}+a_{9} A_{5}
$$

Then $P_{4}$ becomes $0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,1,0$, and $S_{3}$ is the space 20 .
The final supposition, that led to space 20 , was that $P_{4} Q_{4}$ is tangent to $V$. If this were not so, there would exist a $t$ such that $Q_{4}+t P_{4}$ would be on $V$. The $B_{5}$ for this point is $\left(a_{6} a_{9}-a_{7} a_{8}\right) t^{2}$, which requires $t=0$. We have thus shown that the only $S_{3}$ with a line and a point on $V$ and with a line tangent to $V$ at the isolated point is 20 ; and space 20 has no plane tangent to $V$ at a point of the line on $V$.

[^8]We now consider $S_{3}$ with a point and a line on $V$ which contains a plane tangent to $V$ at every point of the line; such a plane is a $\Sigma$-plane in the fivespace $\Sigma$ determined by any point in the plane not on $V$. For the point $P_{4}$, which is in the $\Sigma$-plane, has $a_{6}=a_{7}=a_{8}=a_{9}=0 . \quad S_{3}$ contains no tangent line at $P_{3}$, so $a_{5} \neq 0 . \quad P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0,0 . A_{5}$ can be moved along $p_{3}$ so that $S_{3}$ becomes $20^{\prime}$.

Suppose $S_{3}$ contains a plane tangent to $V$ at one and only one point of $P_{1} P_{2}$. The point may be taken to be $P_{1}$. Then $P_{4}$ has $a_{8}=a_{9}=0, a_{5} \neq 0 . \quad P_{4}=$ $0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, 0,0,0 . R_{4}$ intersects $p_{3}$ at $0,0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}$; using this point for $A_{5}$ we reduce $a_{3}$ to zero. We can now move $A_{4}$ to $0,0,0, a_{6}, a_{7}$ and remove $a_{7}$, if $a_{6} \neq 0$. In that case $S_{3}$ is $20^{\prime \prime}$.

If $a_{6}=0$ just above, $S_{3}$ intersects $V$ in another point, namely,

$$
0, a_{4} a_{5} / a_{7}, 0, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0, a_{7}, 0,0,0
$$

We will now show that this list of $S_{3}$ 's containing a point and a line on $V$, and no other point on $V$, is complete by showing that such an $S_{3}$ having no plane tangent to $V$ at a point of the line is 20 . As shown above, the fact that $S_{3}$ contains no plane tangent to $V$ at a point of $P_{1} P_{2}$ requires $P_{4}$ to be such that $a_{6} a_{9}-a_{7} a_{8} \neq 0$. Now, making use of $T_{9}$, the point $P_{4}=$ $0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0$ is changed to $P_{4}^{\prime}=a_{1}^{\prime}, a_{2}^{\prime}, \cdots, a_{10}^{\prime}$,

$$
\begin{array}{lr}
a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{5}(a d-c), & a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{5}(a-b c), \\
a_{3}^{\prime}=a_{3}+a_{4} f+a_{6} a+a_{7} a f+a_{8} c+a_{9} c f, \\
a_{4}^{\prime}=a_{3} e+a_{4}+a_{6} a e+a_{7} a+a_{8} c e+a_{9} c, \\
a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{5}(1-b d), & a_{6}^{\prime}=a_{6}+a_{7} f+a_{8} d+a_{9} d f, \\
a_{7}^{\prime}=a_{6} e+a_{7}+a_{8} d e+a_{9} d, & a_{8}^{\prime}=a_{6} b+a_{7} b f+a_{8}+a_{9} f, \\
a_{9}^{\prime}=a_{6} b e+a_{7} b+a_{8} e+a_{9}, & a_{10}^{\prime}=0 .
\end{array}
$$

Since $a_{6} a_{9}-a_{7} a_{8} \neq 0, a$ and $c$ in $T_{9}$ can be found to make $a_{3}^{\prime}=a_{4}^{\prime}=0$. Then the change of $A_{4}$ and $A_{5}$ on $p_{3}$ that gave 20 , and if necessary a change of $P_{4}^{\prime}$ in the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{4}^{\prime}$ to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{2}^{\prime}=0$, will give $P_{4}=0,0,0,0, a_{5}, 1,0,0,1,0$. Examining $S_{3}$ for points on $V$, we find the additional point $k=l=a_{5} m-n=$ 0 , which is one too many points unless $a_{5}=0$.

We consider a space $S_{3}$ which contains the ruling $P_{1} P_{2}$ and no other point of $V$, and which lies in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$; no $S_{3}$ with only one line on $V$ could lie in more than one such tangent space. Let $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ be two points of $S_{3}$ which are on a line skew to $P_{1} P_{2}$. The plane $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ is tangent to $V$ since every line in it through $P_{1}$ is a tangent. $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ determine two threespaces $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$ in $X . \quad R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$ may or may not be distinct, but both certainly contain the line $p_{1}$. If $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$ coincide, then $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ is a plane in a five-space $\Sigma$, and it has one point on $V$. This is plane 6 of the list of planes. Coordinates can be selected so that the plane is $k, 0, m, n, 0, r n, m, 0,0,0, r$ not a square. The space $R_{3}=R_{4}$ is $x_{5}=0$.

The line $p_{1}$ is in $R_{3}$, and consequently the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ is in $R_{3}$. We now show that coordinates can be selected so that $P_{1}, P_{3}$, and $P_{4}$ have the above form and at the same time $A_{1}$ is at the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$. Let $\sigma$ be an arbitrary plane in $R_{3}$ on the line $p_{1}$, and let $\pi$ be the image on $V$ of $\sigma$. The polar spaces of $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ with respect to $V$ cut $\pi$ in two distinct lines which intersect at $P_{1}$; let the lines be respectively $\lambda_{3}$ and $\lambda_{4}$. $Q_{3}$ and $Q_{4}$ may be selected respectively on $\lambda_{4}$ and $\lambda_{3}$ to give the above form of the coordinates of $P_{1}, P_{3}$, and $P_{4}$. The point $A_{1}$ is the intersection of $p_{1}, q_{3}$, and $q_{4}^{\prime} ; A_{2}$ is the intersection of $p_{1}, q_{3}^{\prime}$, and $q_{4}$. Since $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ enter symmetrically, if either is the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$, we may take it to be $A_{1}$. If neither is the vertex of the pencil, we may move $P_{3}$ along $P_{3} P_{4}$. The line $\lambda_{3}$ then swings in $\pi$ about $P_{1}$, and the intersection of $q_{3}$ and $p_{1}$ moves along $p_{1}$. Thus we may move $A_{1}$ to the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$.

Now, the plane of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ is not in $R_{3}$, for otherwise $S_{3}$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at each point of $P_{1} P_{2}$. Therefore the line $p_{2}$ intersects $R_{3}$ only at $A_{1}$, and any other point on it may be taken for $A_{3} . \quad S_{3}$ is thus seen to be 21.

If there were any other $S_{3}$ intersecting $V$ only in a ruling and tangent to $V$ at a point of it, then for no selection of $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ would $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$ coincide. For any selection of $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ the line $p_{1}$ would be in both $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$. Coordinates can be selected so that

$$
\begin{gathered}
P_{1}=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0, \quad P_{3}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0 \\
P_{4}=0,1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0
\end{gathered}
$$

$P_{2}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$ and hence has $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. We may suppose that the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ is at $A_{2}$ (see, for example, the change in $A_{3}$ in deriving $T_{3}$ ). $p_{2}$ will be a line joining $A_{2}$ to a point of $A_{1} A_{3} A_{4} A_{5}$. Hence,

$$
P_{2}=a_{1}, 0,0,0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, 0,0,0
$$

We may move $P_{2}$ along the line $P_{1} P_{2}$, and so we may assume $a_{5}=0$. Then any point in $S_{3}$ is

$$
P=m+a_{1} l, n, 0,0, k, a_{6} l, n+a_{7} l, m, 0,0
$$

For this point we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=m^{2}+a_{1} l m-a_{6} l n \\
& B_{2}=-n\left(n+a_{7} l\right), \\
& B_{3}=0 \\
& B_{4}=0 \\
& B_{5}=m\left(n+a_{7} l\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

$n+a_{7} l=0$ gives a plane every point of which determines the three-space $x_{5}=0$, which is $R_{3}$. Thus $P P_{3}$ is a $\Sigma$-line which does not intersect $P_{1} P_{2}$ for
arbitrary $m$ unless $a_{7}=0$. If $a_{7}=0, a_{1} \neq 0, S_{3}$ has another point on $V$, and hence is no new space. If $a_{1}=a_{7}=0$, an obvious change of coordinates puts $S_{3}$ in the form $21^{\prime}$.

We now consider an $S_{3}$ which intersects $V$ only in the line $P_{1} P_{2}$, which is in the space tangent to $V$ at a point but not in the space tangent to $V$ at a point of $P_{1} P_{2}$. We may select points $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ in $S_{3}$ so that $P_{3} P_{4}$ is skew to $P_{1} P_{2}$ and such that $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$ are distinct. This follows from the fact that since $S_{3}$ is not in the tangent space at $P_{1}$, it can contain at most a plane which is in that tangent space, and the plane contains $P_{2} . \quad P_{3}$ can be selected so that $P_{1} P_{3}$ is not a tangent, and then $P_{1}$ will not be in the five-space $\Sigma_{3}$ determined by $P_{3}$. So if $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ determine the same three-spaces in $X$, then $P_{1}+P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ will determine distinct three-spaces.

The line $P_{3} P_{4}$ determines a point $M$ on $V$ such that $M P_{3} P_{4}$ is tangent to $V$ at $M ; P_{1} P_{2}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $M . \quad P_{1} P_{2}$ does not pass through $M$, since $S_{3}$ is not in the space tangent to $V$ at a point of $P_{1} P_{2}$. The plane $P_{1} P_{2} M$ lies wholly on $V$. Two possibilities arise: (a) the lines $p_{1}, p_{2}$, and $m$ lie in a plane; or (b) the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ is on $m$.

In case (a) the plane of intersection of $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$ and the plane of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ intersect in the line $m$. We may take the vertex of the pencil to be $A_{1}$, and we may take $A_{2}$ and $A_{3}$ to be respectively the intersections of $m$ with $p_{1}$ and $p_{2}$. Then $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ will be in the space tangent to $V$ at $M=$ $0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$; hence, for each we have $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. Now, we may determine two other points for $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$, each of the form $0,0,0,0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0$. The new line $P_{3} P_{4}$ is a $\Sigma$-line; the corresponding three-space in $X$ is $x_{1}=0$. Since coordinates of $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ can be put in canonical form by transformations in the space $x_{1}=0$, and since $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are arbitrary points of $P_{1} P_{2}, S_{3}$ becomes 22 .

In case (b) the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ is on $m$. We may take the vertex to be $A_{1}$, the plane of the pencil to be $A_{1} A_{2} A_{3}$, and the line $m$ to be $A_{1} A_{4}$. Then $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$, being in the space tangent to $V$ at $M$, will each have $a_{5}=$ $a_{7}=a_{9}=0$; moreover, for each we may take $a_{1}=a_{2}=0$, since each may be moved in the plane determined by it and the line $P_{1} P_{2}$ without affecting the relations in consideration. Then on the line joining $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ there will be a point $0,0, a_{3}, 0,0, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0, a_{10}$ which is on $V$. Hence, case (b) gives no $S_{3}$ with the required properties.

None of the remaining $S_{3}$ 's with a ruling on $V$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at a point; the largest intersection of $S_{3}$ with a tangent space would be a $\tau$ plane. $\quad S_{3}$ may have several such planes.

We consider first the possibility that $S_{3}$ contains a $\tau$-plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$, where $P_{1} P_{2}$ is a ruling of $V$ and the plane is tangent to $V$ at every point of $P_{1} P_{2}$; the plane is a $\Sigma$-plane. The line joining $P_{3}$ to any point of $P_{1} P_{2}$ is tangent to $V$, and hence the three-space $R_{3}$ contains the plane of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$. If $P_{4}$ is any point of $S_{3}$ not in $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}, R_{4}$ cannot be $R_{3}$, for otherwise $P_{1} P_{4}$ would be a tangent and $S_{3}$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$. Coordinates
can be selected so that

$$
P_{3}=0,0,1,0,1,0,0,0,0,0, \quad P_{4}=0,0,0,0,0,0,1,1,0,0 .
$$

The line $P_{3} P_{4}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $M=0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0$. The tangent space at $M$ is $a_{2}=a_{4}=a_{9}=0$; the five-space $\Sigma$ determined by $P_{3}$ is $a_{4}=a_{7}=a_{9}=a_{10}=0$. Since $S_{3}$ is not in the tangent space at $M$, not both $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ can have $a_{2}=0$; one point of $P_{1} P_{2}$ does have $a_{2}=0$, and we may take it to be $P_{1}$. Hence, $S_{3}$ contains a $\tau$-plane $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$, which is not tangent at $P_{1}$ but is in the space tangent to $V$ at $M$. Therefore, $p_{1}$ intersects $m$; $p_{2}$ does not intersect $m$, for otherwise $S_{3}$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at $M$. The plane $\sigma$ of intersection of $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$ contains $m$. The point $P_{4}$ can be selected on $P_{3} P_{4}$ so that $q_{3}$ passes through the intersection of $p_{1}$ and $m$. The plane $p_{1} p_{2}$ is not $\sigma$ since $p_{2}$ is not in $R_{4}$. The line $P_{1} P_{3}$ is a tangent; $p_{1}$ intersects $q_{3}$ and hence must intersect $q_{3}^{\prime}$. $q_{3}^{\prime}$ may be moved in the pencil $q_{3}^{\prime} m$ until it passes through the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$; then $A_{1}$ may be moved along $q_{3}^{\prime}$ to this point. $P_{1}$ then becomes $1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0$. $P_{3}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{2} . \quad p_{2}$ intersects $q_{3}^{\prime}$ and hence must also intersect $q_{3}$. Therefore, the intersection of $p_{1} p_{2}$ and $\sigma$ is $q_{3}$, and $P_{2}=$ $0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0$. So an $S_{3}$ containing only a ruling on $V$, containing a $\tau$-plane tangent at every point of the ruling, and not in the space tangent to $V$ at any point, is 23 .

A $\Sigma$-plane intersects $V$ in at least one point; any line in the plane which passes through the point on $V$ is tangent to $V$ at the point. Hence if $S_{3}$ intersects $V$ in a ruling $P_{1} P_{2}$ and no other point, and if $S_{3}$ contains a $\Sigma$-plane, the $\Sigma$-plane contains $P_{1} P_{2}$, or else $S_{3}$ is in the tangent space to $V$ at the point where $P_{1} P_{2}$ intersects the $\Sigma$-plane. Therefore, no other $S_{3}$ than those already considered contains a ruling and a $\Sigma$-plane.

Let us suppose that $S_{3}$ contains two $\tau$-planes which intersect in a line skew to $P_{1} P_{2}$. The line of intersection may be taken to be $P_{3} P_{4}$. The line is a $\Sigma$-line, since otherwise it could not be in the spaces tangent to $V$ at two points. The two $\tau$-planes intersect $P_{1} P_{2}$ and may be taken to be $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ and $P_{2} P_{3} P_{4}$. Neither $p_{1}$ nor $p_{2}$ can be in either of the three-spaces $R_{3}$ or $R_{4}$, for then $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$, and $P_{4}$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$ (or $P_{2}$ ). The plane of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ intersects $R_{3}$ in a line which is not a line of the pencil. This line may be taken to be $q_{3}$; then $q_{3}^{\prime}$ is determined, and $q_{4}$ and $q_{4}^{\prime}$ may be selected so that $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ are in canonical form (for a $\Sigma$-line which does not intersect $V$ ). The vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ is outside $R_{3}$ and may be taken to be $A_{1}$. Then $S_{3}$ has the form 24 .

To help with the remaining cases we prove:
Every $S_{3}$ which contains a ruling and no other point of $V$ contains at least $p+1$ $\tau$-planes.

Unless $S_{3}$ contains a pencil of $\tau$-planes on the ruling $P_{2} P_{3}$, it will contain a plane on $P_{2} P_{3}$ which has no other point on $V$ and which is not a $\tau$-plane.

Coordinates may be selected so that this plane is $k, 0,0,0,0,0,0, k, l, m$. (This is number 22 of the list of planes.) Then in $S_{3}$ we may select the point $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, \cdots, a_{7}, 0,0,0$. Any point of $S_{3}$ is

$$
P=k+a_{1} n, a_{2} n, a_{3} n, \cdots, a_{7} n, k, l, m
$$

The conditions that $B=b_{1}, b_{2}, \cdots, b_{10}$ be a point of $V$ such that the space tangent to $V$ at $B$ intersect $S_{3}$ in a plane give a set of five linear congruences in $k, l, m, n$ which has for a matrix of coefficients

$$
\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
b_{1}+b_{8} & 0 & 0 & a_{1} b_{8}-a_{2} b_{6}+a_{3} b_{5}+a_{5} b_{3}-a_{6} b_{2} \\
b_{9} & b_{1} & 0 & a_{1} b_{9}-a_{2} b_{7}+a_{4} b_{5}+a_{5} b_{4}-a_{7} b_{2} \\
b_{10} & 0 & b_{1} & a_{1} b_{10}-a_{3} b_{7}+a_{4} b_{6}+a_{6} b_{4}-a_{7} b_{3} \\
b_{4} & -b_{3} & b_{2} & a_{2} b_{10}-a_{3} b_{9}+a_{4} b_{8} \\
b_{7} & -b_{6} & b_{5} & a_{5} b_{10}-a_{6} b_{9}+a_{7} b_{8}
\end{array}\right]
$$

and it must be possible to select $B$ so that the rank of the matrix is 1 . If the matrix has rank $1, b_{1}=0$; then since $B$ is on $V$,

$$
b_{2} b_{6}-b_{3} b_{5}=0, \quad b_{2} b_{7}-b_{4} b_{5}=0, \quad b_{3} b_{7}-b_{4} b_{6}=0
$$

Unless $b_{2}=b_{3}=b_{4}=0$, we have $b_{5}=r b_{2}, b_{6}=r b_{3}, b_{7}=r b_{4}$. Under these conditions the rank of the matrix is 1 if the first three elements in the fourth column are zeros. These give

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(a_{3} r-a_{6}\right) b_{2}+\left(a_{5}-a_{2} r\right) b_{3} \quad=0, \\
& \left(a_{4} r-a_{7}\right) b_{2} \quad+\left(a_{5}-a_{2} r\right) b_{4}=0, \\
& \left(a_{4} r-a_{7}\right) b_{3}+\left(a_{6}-a_{3} r\right) b_{4}=0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

The determinant of the matrix of coefficients of the $b_{i}$ 's is zero. Hence, for any set of $a$ 's there is a $\tau$-plane $b_{4} k-b_{3} l+b_{2} m=0$, where

$$
b_{2}: b_{3}: b_{4}=a_{2} r-a_{5}: a_{3} r-a_{6}: a_{4} r-a_{7}
$$

These are not all zero since $P_{4}$ is not on $V$. There is one for every $r$, and hence there are $p+1$ of them. The $\tau$-planes all pass through the intersection of the planes

$$
a_{4} k-a_{3} l+a_{2} m=0 \quad \text { and } \quad a_{7} k-a_{6} l+a_{5} m=0
$$

and hence constitute a pencil. A necessary and sufficient condition that this line of intersection have a point in common with $P_{2} P_{3}$, the ruling of $V$, is that $a_{2} a_{6}-a_{3} a_{5}=0$. When the condition is satisfied, the point of intersection of the axis of the pencil of $\tau$-planes and the ruling is $k, l, m, n=0, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0$. The line in $X$ corresponding to this point is $\left\{\begin{array}{l}0,0, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0 \\ 0,0,0,0,1\end{array}\right.$. The three-space $R_{4}$ in $X$, determined by $P_{4}$, is

$$
\left(-a_{3} a_{7}+a_{4} a_{6}\right) x_{3}-\left(-a_{2} a_{7}+a_{4} a_{5}\right) x_{4}=0
$$

Hence the line in $X$ is in $R_{4}$, and the axis of the pencil of $\tau$-planes is a $\Sigma$-line with a point on $V$ and is therefore a tangent to $V$ at that point. The axis of
the pencil of $\tau$-planes and the ruling lie in a plane tangent to $V$ at their intersection.

Any other $S_{3}$ which intersects $V$ in a ruling only will consequently contain a pencil of $\tau$-planes whose axis is either a $\Sigma$-line intersecting the ruling or the ruling itself. We consider the first possibility.

Let $S_{3}$ contain the ruling $P_{3} P_{4}$ and a pencil of $\tau$-planes on $P_{1} P_{3}, P_{1}$ not on $P_{3} P_{4} . \quad P_{1} P_{3}$ is a $\Sigma$-line; $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ is a $\tau$-plane tangent to $V$ at $P_{3} . \quad P_{1} P_{4}$ is not tangent, for otherwise $p_{4}$ would be in $R_{1}$ and $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ would be a $\Sigma$-plane. Let $P_{2}$ be any point of $S_{3}$ not in $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4} . \quad P_{2}$ is not in the tangent space at $P_{3}$, for in that case $S_{3}$ would be a $\tau$-space and of a type already considered. Since $P_{2} P_{3}$ is not a tangent, the line $p_{3}$ is not in $R_{2}$. Hence $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$ are distinct. Therefore the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ is a $\tau$-plane, since it contains $P_{1} P_{3}$, with the line $P_{1} P_{3}$ tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$. This is number 11 of the list of planes. Coordinates can be selected so that $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ is $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k, 0,0$. The point $P_{4}$ is on $V$ and is such that $p_{3}$ and $p_{4}$ intersect. The line $p_{3}$ is $A_{2} A_{4}$. The vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$ is not $A_{2}$, for then $S_{3}$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at $M=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$. The vertex may be made $A_{4}$ by proper choice of $Q_{1}$ on the line $Q_{1} M$. Hence we have

$$
p_{4}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
a_{3}, a_{6}, a_{8}, 0,-a_{10} \quad \text { and } \quad P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, 0,0, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0, a_{10} \\
0,0,0,1,0,
\end{array}\right.
$$

By moving $P_{4}$ along $P_{3} P_{4}, a_{6}$ may be made to take any value. Now by applying transformation $T_{3}$ (page 646), which moves $P_{2}$ along $P_{1} P_{2}$, we may keep the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ unchanged and obtain

$$
P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}-2 a_{10} a, 0,0, a_{6}+a_{8} a, 0, a_{8}, 0, a_{10}
$$

Selecting $a$ to satisfy $a_{3}-2 a_{10} a=0$, and then selecting $a_{6}$ so that $a_{6}+a_{8} a=$ 0 , we have $P_{4}=0,0,0,0,0,0,0, a_{8}, 0, a_{10}$. Applying $T_{2}$ with $k=0, a_{8}-a_{10} l=0$, we get $P_{4}=0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1$. Changing coordinates will put $S_{3}$ in the form 25 .

Every other $S_{3}$ which intersects $V$ only in the ruling $P_{1} P_{2}$ contains a pencil of $\tau$-planes on $P_{1} P_{2}$. We observe first that $S_{3}$ contains a line $P_{3} P_{4}$ skew to $P_{1} P_{2}$ and not a $\Sigma$-line. Suppose $P_{3}^{\prime} P_{4}$ to be a $\Sigma$-line skew to $P_{1} P_{2}$; then no point, say $P_{1}$, of $P_{1} P_{2}$ can be in the five-space $\Sigma_{4}$, for otherwise $P_{1} P_{3}^{\prime} P_{4}$ would be a $\Sigma$-plane, $P_{1} P_{3}^{\prime}$ and $P_{1} P_{4}$ would be tangents, and $S_{3}$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$. Now since $P_{1} P_{3}^{\prime}$ is not a $\Sigma$-line, $P_{3}=P_{1}+P_{3}^{\prime}$ determines in $X$ an $R_{3}$ which is different from $R_{4}$, and $P_{3} P_{4}$ is skew to $P_{1} P_{2}$.

Two $\tau$-planes on $P_{1} P_{2}$ intersect $P_{3} P_{4}$ in two points which may be taken to be $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$. Let $\rho$ be the plane of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$; let $\sigma$ be the plane of intersection of $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$; let $\pi$ be the plane on $V$ whose points represent the lines of $\sigma$. The plane $\pi$ contains a point $M$ such that $M P_{3} P_{4}$ is tangent to $V$ at $M$. Planes $\rho$ and $\sigma$ may coincide, may intersect in a line, or may intersect in a point. If $\rho$ and $\sigma$ coincide, then $P_{1} P_{2}$ is in $\pi$, and $S_{3}$ is in the space
tangent to $V$ at $M$; $S_{3}$ is then either 21 or 22 according as $M$ is on or is not on $P_{1} P_{2}$.

Now suppose $\rho$ and $\sigma$ do not coincide but intersect in a line $l$. Let $L$ be the point of $\pi$ which represents $l$; every point of $P_{1} P_{2}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $L$. Hence if $L$ coincides with $M, S_{3}$ is again a $\tau$-space. So we suppose $l$ and $m$ distinct but intersecting in the point $D$. If $D$ is the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$, every line of the pencil intersects $m$, and $S_{3}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $M$. We therefore suppose $D$ is not the vertex of the pencil; $D$ then determines a line of the pencil which we may take to be $p_{1} . \quad S_{3}$ contains the $\tau$-plane $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ which has one point on $V$. This $\tau$-plane must be one of planes 10,11 , and 13 of the preceding list.

Plane 10 is tangent to $V$ at its intersection with $V, P_{2}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$, and hence if $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ were plane $10, S_{3}$ would be a $\tau$-space. We then consider $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ to be plane 11, which contains one line tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$. For the rest of this argument we interchange the roles of $P_{1} P_{2}$ and $P_{3} P_{4}$ so we may use the plane 11 in the given form. Plane 11 is $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$

$$
k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k, 0,0
$$

it intersects $V$ at $P_{3}$, and contains the tangent line $P_{1} P_{3}$. Now the point $P_{4}$ is on $V$ and is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$; hence for $P_{4}, a_{2}=a_{4}=$ $a_{9}=0$, and

$$
a_{1} a_{8}+a_{3} a_{5}=0, \quad a_{1} a_{10}-a_{3} a_{7}=0, \quad a_{5} a_{10}+a_{7} a_{8}=0
$$

Also, since $P_{4}$ may be any point on $P_{3} P_{4}$, we may suppose $a_{6}=0$. Unless $a_{1}=a_{5}=a_{7}=0$, the above conditions give $a_{3} / a_{1}=-a_{8} / a_{5}=a_{10} / a_{7}=r$. The conditions that $P_{2} P_{3} P_{4}$ be a $\tau$-plane are the conditions that there exist a $B=b_{1}, b_{2}, \cdots, b_{10}$ on $V$ with the plane $P_{2} P_{3} P_{4}$ in the tangent space at $B$. The requirement leads to the result that all the $b$ 's are zero except $b_{1}$ and $b_{5}$ which satisfy $a_{8} b_{1}+a_{3} b_{5}=a_{10} b_{1}=a_{10} b_{5}=0$. Hence $a_{10}=0$. Then (1) $r=0$, or (2) $a_{7}=0$. In case (2), the plane $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ is a $\Sigma$-plane, and $S_{3}$ is space 23. In case (1), $P_{4}=a_{1}, 0,0,0, a_{5}, 0, a_{7}, 0,0,0$. Then $S_{3}$ intersects $V$ in the line $P_{3} P_{4}$ and also in the conic: $l+a_{7} n=0, k^{2}+a_{1} k n+a_{7} m n=0$. If the only intersection is $P_{3} P_{4}$, we must have $a_{1}=a_{7}=0$, and $S_{3}$ is 21 ; it is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{4}$. This disposes of plane 11.

Next suppose the plane $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ above is plane 13, and take it in the form $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}=k, l, 0,0,0, m, l+m, k, 0,0 . \quad P_{4}$ is on $V$ and is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$. Hence for $P_{4}, a_{2}=a_{3}-a_{4}=a_{8}-a_{9}=0$. Also, either (1) $a_{1}=a_{5}=a_{7}=0$, or (2) $a_{3} / a_{1}=-a_{8} / a_{5}=a_{10} / a_{i}=r$. The requirement that $P_{2} P_{3} P_{4}$ be a $\tau$-plane leads again to the requirement that $a_{10}=0$, and hence that $r a_{7}=0$. So we have the possibilities:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P_{4}^{\prime}=a_{1}, 0,0,0, a_{5}, 0, a_{7}, 0,0,0 \\
& P_{4}^{\prime \prime}=a_{1}, 0, r a_{1}, r a_{1}, a_{5}, 0,0,-r a_{5},-r a_{5}, 0
\end{aligned}
$$

$P_{4}^{\prime}$ gives an $S_{3}$ with additional points on $V$, unless $a_{1}=a_{7}=0$, in which case $S_{3}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{4}^{\prime}$. If $r=0, P_{4}^{\prime \prime}$ is $P_{4}^{\prime}$; if $r \neq 0, P_{4}^{\prime \prime}$ gives an $S_{3}$ whose $\tau$-planes all pass through $P_{2} P_{3}$ and hence is 25 . This completes consideration of plane 13 ; it also proves that no new $S_{3}$ is obtained by supposing that $\rho$ and $\sigma$ intersect in a line.

We therefore suppose that $\rho$ and $\sigma$ intersect in a point $D$. The pencil of lines in $\sigma$ on $D$ maps into a line $d$ in $\pi$. If $M$ is on $d$, then at least one of the points of the ruling $P_{1} P_{2}$, say $P_{1}$, is in the space tangent to $V$ at $M$, and $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4}$ is plane 10,11 , or 13 . The argument just completed still holds. Hence for a new $S_{3}, M$ is not on $d$. Two new spaces, 26 and 27, are obtained according as $D$ is or is not the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$.

Since $d$ does not pass through $M$ it intersects the polars of $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ in two distinct points which may be taken to be $Q_{4}$ and $Q_{3}$ respectively. The point $D$ is the intersection of $q_{3}$ and $q_{4}$. Coordinates may be selected so that $D$ is $A_{1}=1,0,0,0,0$, and

$$
P_{3}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0, \quad P_{4}=0,1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0
$$

If $D$ is the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$, the line of intersection of $\rho$ with each of $R_{3}$ and $R_{4}$ is a line of the pencil since it contains $D$. These lines can be taken to be $p_{1}$ and $p_{2}$ respectively. $p_{1}$ then passes through $A_{1}$ and a point of $A_{2} A_{3} A_{4}$, which cannot be on $A_{2} A_{3}$ since $p_{1}$ is not in $R_{4}$. By moving $A_{4}$ on the line $A_{3} A_{4}$ (which can be done without changing the form of $P_{3}$ or $P_{4}$ ), the line $p_{1}$ may be made to intersect $A_{2} A_{4}$. Hence,

$$
P_{2}=a, 0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0
$$

But since $p_{1}$ is in $R_{3}, P_{1} P_{3}$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$. Hence, $a=0$. By the same considerations we may select $A_{5}$ on $p_{2}$, and have

$$
P_{2}=0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0
$$

An interchange of names of vertices of the frame of reference in $X$ changes this into space 27.

If $D$ is not the vertex of the pencil $p_{1} p_{2}$, the plane $\rho$ meets $R_{3}$ in a line of the pencil, say $p_{1}$, but meets $R_{4}$ in a line not of the pencil. Coordinates can be chosen so that $P_{1}, P_{3}$, and $P_{4}$ are as above and the vertex of the pencil is $A_{4}$. The intersection of $\rho$ with $R_{4}$ is a line joining $A_{1}$ to a point of $A_{2} A_{3} A_{5}$ which cannot be on $A_{2} A_{3}$ and hence can be taken to be on $A_{3} A_{5}$. Thus $P_{2}=0,0,0,0,0,0,0, a, 0,1$. In order for $P_{1} P_{2} P_{4}$ to be a $\tau$-plane, it is required that $a=0$. This is space 26. We have completed the determination of all the spaces which contain one and only one ruling of $V$.
(vi) Three-spaces with at least three points but no plane curve on $V$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 28 . \\
& 29+n, k, 0,0,0, n, l, m, n, 0 . \\
& \text { 29. } k, k, n,-n,-n, 0, l, m, 0, n . \\
& 30 . k, n,-n, 0,0, l, m, 0, n .
\end{aligned}
$$

31. $k, k, n, n, 0,0, l, m+n, n, n$.
32. $k, k, n,-n, n, 0, l, m, 0, n$.
33. $k, k, 0, n, n, 0, l, m, 0, n$.
34. $k, k, 0, n, 0, n, l, m, 0,0$.
35. $k, k, n, n, n, n, l, m, 0, n$.

Spaces 28 and 29 intersect $V$ respectively in a twisted cubic curve and in five points; spaces 30 and 31 have four points on $V$, the first with a line tangent to $V$ at one of the points and the second with no such line; the others intersect $V$ in three points. In all the spaces the plane $n=0$ contains $\Sigma$-lines joining pairs of $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$; space 35 contains no other $\Sigma$-line, space 34 contains one other which is tangent to $V$, and space 32 contains one other which does not intersect $V$.

Suppose $S_{3}$ contains three points of $V$ and does not intersect $V$ in a line or a conic. The three points can be taken to be $P_{1}, P_{2}$, and $P_{3}$, and coordinates can be selected so that $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ is

$$
k, k, 0,0,0,0, l, m, 0,0
$$

If $S_{3}$ contains two more points of $V$, the line joining them cannot intersect any of the lines $P_{1} P_{2}, P_{1} P_{3}$, or $P_{2} P_{3}$, for otherwise $S_{3}$ would contain a plane with four points on $V$ and hence would intersect $V$ in a line or a conic. This line intersects the plane of $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ in a point $P$ which can be taken to be the unit point in the plane; furthermore the line is a $\Sigma$-line and contains a point uniquely defined as the conjugate of $P$ with respect to $V$. Let this conjugate of $P$ be $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, \cdots, a_{10}$. The fact that $P_{4}$ is conjugate to

$$
P=1,1,0,0,0,0,1,1,0,0
$$

gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \quad a_{1}-a_{6}+a_{8}=0, \quad a_{2}+a_{7}-a_{9}=0 \\
& -a_{3}+a_{10}=0, \quad a_{4}+a_{10}=0, \quad a_{7}+a_{8}=0
\end{aligned}
$$

These relations hold not only when $S_{3}$ has five points on $V$, but also whenever $S_{3}$ has three points on $V$ and the line $P P_{4}$ is a $\Sigma$-line. We note that all or none of $a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{10}$ are zero.

The transformation $T_{5}$ (page 653) leaves each of the points $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}, P$ unchanged, but changes $P_{4}$ to $P_{4}^{\prime}$ with

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
a_{1}^{\prime} & =a_{1}-a_{4} c, & & a_{6}^{\prime}=-a_{3} a+a_{6}+a_{10} c, \\
a_{2}^{\prime}= & a_{2}-a_{3} b, & & a_{7}^{\prime}=-a_{4} a+a_{7}, \\
a_{3}^{\prime} & =a_{3}, & & a_{8}^{\prime}=-a_{3} a+a_{8}, \\
a_{4}^{\prime} & =a_{4}, & a_{9}^{\prime}=-a_{4} a+a_{9}-a_{10} b, \\
a_{5}^{\prime} & =a_{1} a-a_{2} b+a_{3} a b-a_{4} a c & a_{10}^{\prime}=a_{10} \\
& +a_{5}-a_{6} b+a_{9} c-a_{10} b c, &
\end{array}
$$

In the case where $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0, a, b$, and $c$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$. We then have $P_{4}^{\prime}=a_{1}^{\prime}, a_{2}^{\prime}, 0,0,0, a_{6}^{\prime}, a_{7}^{\prime}, a_{8}^{\prime}, a_{9}^{\prime}, 0 . \quad S_{3}$ contains the point $P_{4}^{\prime \prime}=a_{1}^{\prime \prime}, 0,0,0,0, a_{6}^{\prime \prime}, 0,0, a_{9}^{\prime \prime}, 0$. It may be verified that if $a_{1}^{\prime \prime} a_{6}^{\prime \prime} a_{9}^{\prime \prime}=0, S_{3}$ intersects $V$ in a line or a conic. An obvious change of the unit point in $X$ changes the $a$ 's to 1's. The space is thus shown to be 28. It will be useful to consider this space more closely.

The $B$ 's for a point in $S_{3}$ are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=k m+m n-k n, \\
& B_{2}=k n+n^{2}-k l, \\
& B_{3}=0, \\
& B_{4}=0, \\
& B_{5}=l m-n^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Setting the $B$ 's equal to zero we get three cones with vertices at $P_{1}, P_{2}$, and $P_{3}$. Each pair of the cones has a common ruling, and the remainder of the intersection is a cubic curve; the ruling is not on the third cone, but the cubic curve is. $\quad S_{3}$ thus intersects $V$ in the cubic curve; of course $S_{3}$ contains a line tangent to the curve at each of its points.

In the case where $a_{3} a_{4} a_{10} \neq 0$ we may select $a, b$, and $c$ in $T_{5}$ so that $a_{1}^{\prime}=$ $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}=0$. Taking account of the fact that $P_{4}^{\prime}$ is conjugate to $P$ and making the proper selection of the unit point in $X$, we obtain

$$
P_{4}^{\prime}=0,0,1,-1,-r, 0,0,0,0,1 .
$$

Changing the unit point in $X$ to $1, d, d, 1,1$ changes $r$ in $P_{4}^{\prime}$ to $r d^{2}$. Hence the possibilities are: $r$ is 0,1 , or a particular not-square. If $r=1, S_{3}$ has five points on $V$ and is 29 . Conversely, if $S_{3}$ has five points on $V, r=1$.

If $r=0$, then $P_{4}^{\prime}$ is on $V, P P_{4}^{\prime}$ is tangent to $V$, and $S_{3}$ is 30 . Conversely, if $S_{3}$ has just four points on $V$ and contains a line tangent to $V$ at one of them, the above argument holds, and we obtain $P_{4}^{\prime}$ with $r=0$.

If $r$ is a not-square, then $S_{3}$ has only three points on $V$. The line $P P_{4}^{\prime}$ is a $\Sigma$-line not in the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ and with no point on $V$. This is space 32 and is defined by these properties.

There is no other $S_{3}$ intersecting $V$ in a curve or in five points. If there is an $S_{3}$ other than 30 with just four points on $V$, it can have no line tangent to $V$ at any of the four points. Let the four points on $V$ be $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}, P_{4}$ where $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ is as above and $P_{4}$ is $a_{1}, a_{2}, \cdots, a_{10}$. Any point in $S_{3}$ is

$$
k+a_{1} n, k+a_{2} n, a_{3} n, \cdots, l+a_{7} n, m+a_{8} n, a_{9} n, a_{10} n
$$

If $a_{3}=0$, the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{2}$ intersects $V$ in the line $k+a_{2} n=$ $m+a_{8} n=0$; likewise if $a_{4}=0$, the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$ intersects $S_{3}$ in a line. We may therefore suppose that $a_{3} a_{4} \neq 0$. Then $a, b, c$ in $T_{5}$ may be selected so that $P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, a_{9}, a_{10}$. Since $P_{4}$ is on $V$,
we have $a_{3} a_{5}=a_{4} a_{5}=a_{4} a_{6}=-a_{3} a_{9}+a_{4} a_{8}=a_{5} a_{10}-a_{6} a_{9}=0$. Thus, $a_{5}=a_{6}=0, a_{4}=r a_{3}, a_{9}=r a_{8}$. It may be verified that if $a_{10}=0, S_{3}$ has a line tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$, and if $a_{8}=0$ it contains a line tangent at $P_{4}$. The unit point in $X$ can be selected to make $r=a_{3}=a_{8}=a_{10}=1$. The space is 31 .

Any other space of this set will have just three points on $V$; if it has a $\Sigma$-line not in the plane of the three points, one of the three points may be on it; it does not intersect the triangle $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ elsewhere since no $\Sigma$-plane intersects $V$ in two points. We suppose that $S_{3}$ has a $\Sigma$-line tangent to $V$ at $P_{2}$; we take $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ as above and $P_{4}$ an arbitrary point, not $P_{2}$, on the $\Sigma$-line. Then $P_{4}=a_{1}, 0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0,0, a_{9}, a_{10}$. We have the following possibilities:
(1) $\quad a_{4}=a_{10}=0 . \quad P_{4}$ is not on $V$ and hence $a_{9} \neq 0$. We may determine $c$ in $T_{5}$ to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$. The unit point in $X$ may be selected to make $a_{1}=$ $a_{6}=a_{9} . \quad$ This $S_{3}$ is 28.
(2) $a_{4} a_{10} \neq 0$. Then $c$ in $T_{5}$ can be selected to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=0$. If $a_{1} a_{10}+a_{4} a_{6}=0$, then $a_{6}^{\prime}$ is also zero. $a$ and $b$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$. Proper choice of the unit point gives 33. If $a_{1} a_{10}+a_{4} a_{6} \neq 0$, selection of $c$ to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=0$ makes $a_{6}^{\prime} \neq 0$. Then $b$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$ and $a$ to make $a_{9}^{\prime}=0$. In this case $S_{3}$ has a fourth point on $V$, namely,

$$
k, l, m, n=-a_{4} a_{6}, 0, a_{6} a_{10}, a_{10}
$$

(3) $\quad a_{4}=0, a_{10} \neq 0 . \quad c$ and $b$ in $T_{5}$ can be selected to make $a_{6}^{\prime}=a_{9}^{\prime}=0$. If $a_{1}=0$, the plane $k=0$ intersects $V$ in a conic; if $a_{1} \neq 0, a$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$. Hence we need consider here only

$$
k+n, k, 0,0,0,0, l, m, 0, n .
$$

(4) $\quad a_{4} \neq 0, a_{10}=0 . \quad T_{5}$ can be selected to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{9}^{\prime}=0$, and if $a_{6} \neq 0$ to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$ also. If $a_{6}=0$, the plane $m=0$ intersects $V$ in a conic. Hence we have $k, k, 0, n, 0, n, l, m, 0,0$.

Each of (2), (3), (4) gives an $S_{3}$ with three points on $V$ and a line tangent to $V$ at $P_{2}$. We examine their intersections with the spaces tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$ also. In the respective cases, the tangent spaces are

| Case (2) at $P_{3}: k=l=n=0$, | at $P_{1}: l=m=n=0$, |
| :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Case (3) at $P_{3}: k+n=l=0$, | at $P_{1}: l=m=n=0$, |
| Case (4) at $P_{3}: k=l=n=0$, | at $P_{1}: m-n=l=0$. |

Hence $S_{3}$ in case (2) differs from the other two which are alike, as may be shown by interchanging the roles of $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$. Case (4) is 34 .

Finally, any other $S_{3}$ with just three points on $V$ contains no line tangent to $V$ at any of the points. In $P_{4}$ none of $a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{10}$ is zero. $T_{5}$ can be selected to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{4}^{\prime}=0$. Then $P_{4}^{\prime}$ can be changed in $S_{3}$ to make $a_{7}^{\prime}=a_{8}^{\prime}=0$. If either of $a_{5}^{\prime}$ or $a_{6}^{\prime}$ is zero. there is a fourth point on $V$. This $S_{3}$ is 35 .
(vii) Three-spaces with two points on $V$.
36. $k+n, l, n, 0,0, m, l, k+r m, m, 0, x^{3}+r x-1$ irreducible.
37. $k, l, 0,-n, n, 0, l, m, 0, n$.
38. $k, l, 0,0, n, 0, l, m, 0, n$.
39. $k, l, 0, n, r n, 0, l, m, 0,0$.
40. $k, l, 0, n, 0, n, l, m, n, 0$.
41. $k, l, 0, n, 0, n, l, m, 0,0$.
42. $k, l, n, n, n, 0, l, m, 0,0$.

The $\tau$-plane $n=0$ in 36 has no point on $V$; every $\tau$-plane in each of the others has at least one point on $V$. Spaces 37 and 38 have three $\tau$-planes; in 37 one of the $\tau$-planes contains both points of $V$; in 38 two of the $\tau$-planes contain both points of $V$. All of the planes on $P_{3}$ in 39 are $\tau$-planes, and so also is $P_{1} P_{2} P_{4}$. Space 40 contains two $\tau$-planes. Spaces 41 and 42 have pencils of $\tau$-planes on the two points of $V$, and in each the plane $m=0$ is a $\tau$-plane; the difference between them is harder to describe and will be left to the end of this section.

We consider a three-space $S_{3}$ with two points, $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$, on $V$. The line $O_{1} O_{2}$ is obviously a $\Sigma$-line. $S_{3}$ contains planes with no points on $V$; such planes are of three types: 7,8 , and 9 of the preceding list. We shall show first that there is just one type of $S_{3}$ which contains a $\tau$-plane with no point on $V$; then we shall show that every other $S_{3}$ on $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$ contains a $\tau$-plane on $O_{1} O_{2}$.

Let $S_{3}$ contain the $\tau$-plane which has no point on $V$ :

$$
k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k+r m, m, 0
$$

In considering transformation $T_{14}$ it was shown that $P_{1}$ could be chosen arbitrarily and then $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$ determined so that the plane has this form. Hence we may assume that $O_{1} O_{2}$ passes through $P_{1}$ and that $O_{1}$ is

$$
P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0,0
$$

where $a_{1} a_{8}-a_{2} a_{6}+a_{3} a_{5}=0$, and since $P_{1} P_{4}$ intersects $V$ in two points $a_{1}+a_{8} \neq 0$. Transformation $T_{2}$ leaves $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ unchanged; it changes $P_{3}$ and $P_{4}$ to
$P_{3}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0, r k, 1,0, r, 1,0$,
$P_{4}^{\prime}=a_{1}-a_{3} k, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0,-a_{1} k-a_{2} l+a_{3} k^{2}+a_{5}+a_{8} k,-a_{3} l+a_{6}, 0$,

$$
a_{3} k+a_{8}, 0,0 .^{13}
$$

Transformation $T_{1}$ then changes $P_{3}^{\prime}$ and $P_{4}^{\prime}$ to

$$
P_{3}^{\prime \prime}=0,0,0,0, r k-a+b, 1,0, r, 1,0, \quad P_{4}^{\prime \prime}=a_{1}^{\prime \prime}, a_{2}^{\prime \prime}, \cdots, a_{10}^{\prime \prime}
$$

[^9]where

| $a_{1}^{\prime \prime}=a_{1}-a_{3} k$, | $a_{6}^{\prime \prime}=-a_{3} l+a_{6}$, |
| :--- | :--- |
| $a_{2}^{\prime \prime}=a_{2}-a_{3} a$, | $a_{7}^{\prime \prime}=0$, |
| $a_{3}^{\prime \prime}=a_{3}$, | $a_{8}^{\prime \prime}=a_{3} k+a_{8}$, |
| $a_{4}^{\prime \prime}=0$, | $a_{9}^{\prime \prime}=0$, |
| $a_{5}^{\prime \prime}=-a_{1} k-a_{2} l+a_{3} k^{2}+a_{5}+a_{8} k-\left(-a_{3} l+a_{6}\right) a$, | $a_{10}^{\prime \prime}=0$. |

We select $a, b, k$, and $l$ to satisfy

$$
a_{3} k+a_{8}=0, \quad-a_{3} l+a_{6}=0, \quad a_{2}-a_{3} a=0, \quad r k-a+b=0
$$

Then

$$
P_{3}^{\prime \prime}=0,0,0,0,0,1,0, r, 1,0, \quad P_{4}^{\prime \prime}=a_{1}^{\prime \prime}, 0, a_{3}^{\prime \prime}, 0, a_{5}^{\prime \prime}, 0,0,0,0,0
$$

Since $P_{4}^{\prime \prime}$ is on $V, a_{3}^{\prime \prime} a_{5}^{\prime \prime}=0$. If $a_{3}^{\prime \prime}=0, S_{3}$ would be in the space tangent to $V$ at $0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$, and in particular $S_{3}$ would contain a $\tau$-plane on $O_{1} O_{2}$. If $a_{1}^{\prime \prime}=0, P_{1} P_{4}^{\prime \prime}$ has only one point on $V$. An obvious choice of the unit point in $X$ changes $P_{4}^{\prime \prime}$ to $1,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0 . \quad S_{3}$ is space 36 . We have thus shown that an $S_{3}$ with two points on $V$ and a $\tau$-plane which does not intersect $V$ either is 36 or else contains a $\tau$-plane which has two points on $V$. ${ }^{14}$

Suppose $S_{3}$ contains plane 8 , which has no point on $V$ but has a $\Sigma$-line. The plane is $k, l, m, 0,-r m, 0, l, k, 0,0, \quad r$ not a square. $P_{1} P_{3}$ is the $\Sigma$-line; $P_{1} P_{2}$ is any line in the plane except the $\Sigma$-line. The line $O_{1} O_{2}$ intersects this plane in a point which cannot be on $P_{1} P_{3}$, for then the plane $O_{1} P_{1} P_{3}$ would be a $\Sigma$-plane and would intersect $V$ in more than two points. The intersection can be taken to be $P_{2} . \quad R_{2}$ is $x_{4}=0$. Hence $O_{1}$ is
$P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, 0, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0, a_{7}, 0, a_{9}, 0, \quad a_{1} a_{9}-a_{2} a_{7}+a_{4} a_{5}=0, \quad a_{2}+a_{7} \neq 0$.
Transformation $T_{13}$ puts $P_{4}$ into

$$
P_{4}^{\prime}=a_{1}+a_{5} a, a_{2}, 0, a_{4}-a_{9} a, a_{5}-a_{1} a, 0, a_{7}, 0, a_{4} a+a_{9}, 0
$$

If $a_{9}=0$, the plane $k=0$ is a $\tau$-plane on $P_{2} P_{4}$; if $a_{4}=0, m=0$ is a $\tau$-plane on $P_{2} P_{4}$; if $a_{9} \neq 0$, then $T_{13}$ may be selected to make $a_{4}^{\prime}=0$. Hence in any case $S_{3}$ contains a $\tau$-plane on $O_{1} O_{2}$.

Any other $S_{3}$ contains a plane with no point on $V$ which is not a $\tau$-plane and which contains no $\Sigma$-line. This plane is 9 :

$$
k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m
$$

The line $O_{1} O_{2}$ intersects this plane; we examine $S_{3}$ according to the location of the intersection with respect to the conic $C: m^{2}-2 k l=0$. If the intersection

[^10]is on $C$ it may be taken to be $P_{1}$; if outside $C$, let it be $P_{3}$; if inside $C$, then let it be $P_{1}+P_{2}=1,1,0,0,0,0,1,1,0,0 .^{15}$
(a) The intersection is $P_{1}$. We may take $O_{1}$ to be
$$
P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0,0
$$
where $a_{1} a_{8}-a_{2} a_{6}+a_{3} a_{5}=0, a_{1}+a_{8} \neq 0$. The plane $l+a_{2} n=0$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at the point $0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0$. If $a_{2}=0$, this $\tau$-plane contains both $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$; if $a_{2} \neq 0$, the $\tau$-plane contains neither. So $S_{3}$ either is 36 or else contains a $\tau$-plane on $O_{1} O_{2}$.
(b) The intersection is $P_{3}$. The three-space $R_{3}$ in $X$ is $x_{1}=0$. Let $O_{1}$ be
$$
P_{4}=0,0,0,0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, a_{10}
$$
where $a_{5} a_{10}-a_{6} a_{9}+a_{7} a_{8}=0, a_{5}+a_{10} \neq 0$. A $\tau$-plane intersects $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ in a line and hence is in the space tangent to $V$ at the point
$$
b c^{2}, a c^{2}, b^{2} c,-a^{2} c,\left(2 a b-c^{2}\right) c, b^{3},-a\left(a b+c^{2}\right),-b\left(a b+c^{2}\right), a^{3},-a b c
$$
$a, b, c$ must be such that the matrix
\[

\left[$$
\begin{array}{cc}
b^{2} & a_{8} b c^{2}-a_{6} a c^{2}+a_{5} b^{2} c \\
-a^{2} & a_{9} b c^{2}-a_{7} a c^{2}-a_{5} a^{2} c \\
b c & a_{10} b c^{2}-a_{7} b^{2} c-a_{6} a^{2} c \\
a c & a_{10} a c^{2}-a_{9} b^{2} c-a_{8} a^{2} c \\
a b+c^{2} & a_{10}\left(2 a b+c^{2}\right) c-a_{9} b^{3}-a_{8} a\left(a b+c^{2}\right)-a_{7} b\left(a b+c^{2}\right)-a_{6} a^{3}-a_{5} a b c
\end{array}
$$\right]
\]

has rank 1. The space tangent to $V$ at the above point meets $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ in the line $a k+b l-c m=0$. If $c=0$, the rank of the matrix is 1 for $a$ and $b$ satisfying $a_{6} a^{3}+a_{8} a^{2} b+a_{7} a b^{2}+a_{9} b^{3}=0$. If this polynomial is reducible, $S_{3}$ has a $\tau$-plane on $P_{3} P_{4}$. So at this time we need consider only the case where the polynomial is irreducible. Then a $\tau$-plane would be given only by $a=b=0$. The $\tau$-plane would be $m+a_{10} n=0$. It would pass through $O_{1}=P_{4}$ only if $a_{10}=0$, in which case $a_{6} a_{9}-a_{7} a_{8}=0$ and the polynomial is reducible. The $\tau$-plane exists and either it contains $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$, or $S_{3}$ is 36 .
(c) The intersection is $P_{1}+P_{2} . \quad O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$ represent lines in the threespace $R$ determined by $1,1,0,0,0,0,1,1,0,0$. We take $O_{1}$ to be

$$
P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3},-a_{3}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{1}-a_{6}, a_{8}, a_{2}-a_{8}, a_{3}
$$

with $a_{1} a_{8}-a_{2} a_{6}+a_{3} a_{5}=0$. An argument about $\tau$-planes similar to that in (b), with $a=b$ and $c=0$, shows that $k+l+\left(a_{1}+a_{2}\right) n=0$ is a $\tau$-plane. If neither $O_{1}$ nor $O_{2}$ is in this plane, then $S_{3}$ is 36 . If one of $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$ is in the plane, we may suppose the one is $O_{1}$, and then $a_{1}+a_{2}=0$. If $a_{1}+a_{2}=0$, then $a=a_{3}, b=-a_{3}, c=-a_{1}$ gives the $\tau$-plane $a_{3} k-a_{3} l+$ $a_{1} m=0$ which contains both $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$. This settles the question unless $a_{1}=a_{2}=a_{3}=0$, and in this case $m=0$ is a $\tau$-plane which contains both

[^11]$O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$. This completes the proof that $S_{3}$ with just two points on $V$ either is 36 or else contains a $\tau$-plane on $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$.

We now investigate $S$ 's containing a $\tau$-plane on two points of $V$, and we take the plane in the form

$$
k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, m, 0,0
$$

$S_{3}$ will contain the point $P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, 0, a_{9}, a_{10}$. Transformation $T_{6}$ leaves $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ unchanged and puts $P_{4}$ into $P_{4}^{\prime}$ where
$a_{1}^{\prime}=-a_{4} c$,
$a_{2}^{\prime}=-a_{3} b+a_{4} a$,
$a_{3}^{\prime}=a_{3}$,
$a_{4}^{\prime}=a_{4}$,
$a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{3} a b-a_{4} a+a_{5}-a_{6} b+a_{7} a+a_{9} c-a_{10} b c$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a_{6}^{\prime}=-a_{3} a+a_{6}+a_{10} c \\
& a_{7}^{\prime}=-a_{4} a+a_{7} \\
& a_{8}^{\prime}=-a_{10} a \\
& a_{9}^{\prime}=a_{9}-a_{10} b \\
& a_{10}^{\prime}=a_{10}
\end{aligned}
$$

We shall sort the $S_{3}$ 's according to the zeros among $a_{3}, a_{4}$, and $a_{10}$.
(1) Suppose $a_{3} a_{4} a_{10} \neq 0$. Then $b$ in $T_{6}$ can be selected to make $a_{9}^{\prime}=0$, $a$ to satisfy $a_{3} b-2 a_{4} a+a_{7}=0$ making $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}$, then $c$ to make $a_{6}^{\prime}=0$. In $S_{3}$ there is the point $P_{4}^{\prime \prime}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}^{\prime}, 0,0,0,0, a_{10}$. Transformation $T_{7}$, which leaves $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$ fixed and moves $P_{2}$ along the $\Sigma$-line $P_{1} P_{2}$, can be applied with $b=0$ and $a_{3}+a_{10} c=0$; this changes $P_{4}^{\prime \prime}$ to

$$
0,0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0, a_{10}
$$

A change of the unit point ${ }^{16}$ gives $P_{4}^{\prime \prime}=0,0,0,-1,1,0,0,0,0,1$, and $S_{3}$ is 37 .

We have shown that a coordinate system can be selected so that the particular $S_{3}$ we have been studying takes the form 37 . We seek information about it that is independent of the coordinate system to help distinguish among $S_{3}$ 's given in different coordinate systems. We examine 37 for $\tau$-planes. The space tangent to $V$ at $B=b_{1}, b_{2}, \cdots, b_{10}$ intersects $S_{3}$ in a plane if the matrix

$$
\left[\begin{array}{cccc}
b_{8} & -b_{6} & b_{1} & b_{3} \\
b_{9} & -\left(b_{2}+b_{7}\right) & 0 & b_{4}-b_{5} \\
b_{10} & -b_{3} & 0 & b_{1}-b_{6} \\
0 & b_{10} & b_{4} & b_{2}-b_{8} \\
0 & b_{8} & b_{7} & b_{5}+b_{10}
\end{array}\right]
$$

[^12]has rank 1. The only such points $B$ and the corresponding $\tau$-planes are
\[

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0, \quad \text { with plane } k=0 \\
& 1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0, \quad \text { with plane } l-m=0 \\
& 0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0, \quad \text { with plane } n=0
\end{aligned}
$$
\]

Thus $S_{3}$ contains just three $\tau$-planes, and only one of them, $n=0$, is on both $O_{1}$ and $O_{2}$.
(2) Suppose $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. Then $S_{3}$ contains the point

$$
P_{4}=0,0,0,0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, 0, a_{9}, 0
$$

Since $P_{4}$ is not on $V, a_{6} a_{9} \neq 0$. Then $T_{6}$ can be selected so that $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$, and the unit point can be selected so that $P_{4}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0,0,1, r, 0,1,0$. If $r \neq 0$, the line $k=l=0$ has two points on $V$, and hence $S_{3}$ has at least three; if $r=0, S_{3}$ intersects $V$ in a cubic curve.
(3) Suppose $a_{3}=a_{4}=0, a_{10} \neq 0$. In $T_{6}$ we may select $b$ to make $a_{9}^{\prime}=0$, $c$ to make $a_{6}^{\prime}=0$. Then $a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{5}-a_{6} b+a_{7} a$. Hence if $a_{7} \neq 0$, we may select $a$ to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$, but in that case $P_{4}^{\prime}$ is on $V$. Hence with proper choice of the unit point we have $P_{4}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1$, and $S_{3}$ is 38 . It is readily verified that $S_{3}$ contains the three $\tau$-planes: $k=0 ; l=0 ; n=0$. Each of the last two is on $O_{1} O_{2}$, and therefore 37 and 38 are different.
(4) Suppose $a_{3}=a_{10}=0, a_{4} \neq 0$. In $T_{6}$ we may select $a$ to make $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}$, then $a_{5}^{\prime}=-a_{4} a+a_{5}-a_{6} b+a_{7} a+a_{9} c$. We can select $b$ and $c$ to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$ unless $a_{6}=a_{9}=0$.

If $a_{6}=a_{9}=0, S_{3}$ is 39 . The points of $V$ whose tangent spaces intersect $S_{3}$ in planes, and the planes, are:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0, \quad \text { with } m=0 \\
& 0, b_{2}, 0,0, b_{5}, 0,0,0, b_{9}, 0, \quad \text { with } b_{9} k-b_{2} l+b_{5} n=0
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus every plane on $P_{3}$ is a $\tau$-plane.
Suppose now that not both $a_{6}$ and $a_{9}$ are zero. Then

$$
P_{4}=0,0,0, a_{4}, 0, a_{6}, 0,0, a_{9}, 0
$$

Since $P_{4}$ is not on $V, a_{6} \neq 0$. If $a_{9} \neq 0, S_{3}$ is space 40 ; it contains only two $\tau$-planes: $m=0$, and $n=0$. The plane $m=0$ does not pass through $O_{2}$.

If $a_{9}=0$, then $S_{3}$ is $41 . S_{3}$ contains the $\tau$-plane $m=0$ tangent to $V$ at $O_{1}$, and the pencil of $\tau$-planes $b_{6} l+b_{2} n=0$ each in the space tangent to $V$ at $0, b_{2}, b_{3}, 0, b_{5}, b_{6}, 0,0,0,0$, where the $b$ 's satisfy $b_{2} b_{6}-b_{3} b_{5}=0, b_{2}^{2}+b_{5} b_{6}=0$.
(5) Suppose $a_{4}=a_{10}=0, a_{3} \neq 0$. In $T_{6}, b$ can be selected to make $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}$, and $a$ to make $a_{6}^{\prime}=0$. Then $a_{5}^{\prime}=a_{3} a b+a_{5}-a_{6} b+a_{7} a+a_{9} c$ which can be made zero if $a_{9} \neq 0$. If $a_{9}=0, S_{3}$ intersects $V$ in a conic. Thus we have only to consider $S_{3}=k, l, n, 0,0,0, l, m, n, 0$. It has three $\tau$-planes, two on $O_{1} O_{2}$; it is the same as 38 with the two $\tau$-planes on $O_{1} O_{2}$ interchanged.
(6) Suppose $a_{3}=0, a_{4} a_{10} \neq 0$. In $T_{6}, b$ can be selected to make $a_{9}^{\prime}=0$, $a$ to make $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}$, and $c$ to make $a_{6}^{\prime}=0$. If $a_{5}^{\prime} \neq 0$, this is 37 ; if $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$, $P_{4}^{\prime}$ is on $V$.
(7) Suppose $a_{4}=0, a_{3} a_{10} \neq 0$. In $T_{6}, b$ can be selected to make $a_{9}^{\prime}=0$, $c$ to make $a_{6}^{\prime}=0$, and $a$ to make $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime} . \quad a_{5}^{\prime}$ cannot be zero since $P_{4}^{\prime}$ is not on $V$. This $S_{3}$ has three $\tau$-planes, two on $O_{1} O_{2}$. Transformation $T_{7}$ can be used to change it into 38 .
(8) Suppose $a_{10}=0, a_{3} a_{4} \neq 0$. In $T_{6}, a$ can be selected to make $a_{6}^{\prime}=0$, $b$ to make $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}$, and then if $a_{9} \neq 0, c$ can be selected to make $a_{5}^{\prime}=0$. This $S_{3}$ has a third point on $V$. Hence $a_{9}=0$ and $S_{3}$ is 42 . It contains the $\tau$-plane $m=0$ tangent to $V$ at $P_{1}$; it contains also the pencil of $\tau$-planes $b_{3} l-b_{2} n=0$ each in the space tangent to $V$ at $0, b_{2}, b_{3}, 0, b_{5}, b_{6}, 0,0,0,0$, where $b_{2} b_{6}-b_{3} b_{5}=0, b_{3}^{2}-b_{6}^{2}+b_{3} b_{5}=0$.

We have shown that any $S_{3}$ with just two points on $V$ is one of spaces 36 to 42. We have still to show that 41 and 42 differ other than by a choice of coordinate system. In either space any plane on $O_{1} O_{2}$ could be taken for $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$, and it is necessary to show that no such choice could turn one into the other.

We examine further the space

$$
k, l, n, n, n, 0, l, m, 0,0
$$

For any point $P$ the $B$ 's are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=k m+n^{2} \\
& B_{2}=-l^{2}+n^{2} \\
& B_{3}=-l n \\
& B_{4}=m n \\
& B_{5}=l m
\end{aligned}
$$

The three-space $R$ in $X$ determined by $P$ is

$$
\operatorname{lm} x_{1}-m n x_{2}-\ln x_{3}+\left(l^{2}-n^{2}\right) x_{4}+\left(k m+n^{2}\right) x_{5}=0
$$

If we suppose a set $x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, x_{4}, x_{5}$ given, the above relation defines a quadric surface in $S_{3}$. Every point $P$, excepting $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$, determines a three-space in $X$; on the other hand, every point $A$ in $X$, without exception, determines a quadric $Q$ in $S_{3}$. If $A$ is in the space $R$ determined by $P$, then $P$ is on the quadric $Q$ determined by $A$. The points of $S_{3}$ which are on $V$ do not determine $R$ 's, but these points are on every $Q$ determined by a point of $X$. These relations do not depend on any particular choice of the coordinate system. A change of coordinate system changes the $B$ 's but does not change the fourparameter system of quadrics in $S_{3}$.

Now $S_{3}$ has two points, $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$, on $V$. Each of these points is the image of a line in $X$. The points of a line in $X$ determine the quadrics of a
pencil in $S_{3}$. Consequently, the set of quadrics in $S_{3}$ determined by the points of $X$ contains two pencils uniquely defined by the relation of $S_{3}$ to $V$. The pencil determined by $p_{1}$ is $l m x_{1}-m n x_{2}=0$; the pencil determined by $P_{3}$ is $\ln x_{3}-\left(l^{2}-n^{2}\right) x_{4}=0$. Every quadric of the first pencil consists of a pair of planes one of which is $m=0$; likewise, every quadric of the second pencil is a pair of planes also, since $x_{3}^{2}+4 x_{4}^{2}$ is irreducible.

For $S_{3}$ of type 42 the corresponding system of quadrics is

$$
l m x_{1}-m n x_{2}+n^{2} x_{3}+l^{2} x_{4}+(k m-l n) x_{5}=0
$$

The special pencils are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& l m x_{1}-m n x_{2}=0, \\
& n^{2} x_{3}+l^{2} x_{4}=0, \\
& \text { given by } P_{1}
\end{aligned}
$$

The latter pencil contains the two quadrics $l^{2}=0$ and $n^{2}=0$, each consisting of two coincident planes. Thus by no change of coordinate system can 41 be changed into 42.
(viii) Three-spaces with one point on $V$.
43. $k, l, 0,0, n, m, l, k+r m, m, 0, x^{3}+r x-1$ irreducible.
44. $k, l, 0, n, m, n, l, k, 0,0$.
45. $k, l, n, 0, n, m, l, k, 0,0$.
46. $k, l, 0,-n, n, m, l, k, 0,0$.
47. $k, l, n, 0,0, m, l, k, n, 0$.
48. $k+n, l, m, 0,0, r n, l, k, n, 0, x^{3}+x^{2}-r^{2}$ irreducible.
49. $k, l, n, 0,0, m, l+m, k, n, 0$.
50. $k, l, 0,-n, n, m, l+m, k, 0,0$.
51. $k, l, n,-n, n, 0, l, k, 0, m$.
52. $k, l, n, n,-n, 2 n, l, k, 0, m$.

Space 43 is tangent to $V$ at $P_{4}$ which is on $V$; none of the others has this property. Spaces 44 and 45 contain one plane each tangent to $V$ at $O$, the point of $S_{3}$ on $V$; in 45 this tangent plane is a $\Sigma$-plane; in 44 it is not. Spaces 46, 47, 48 intersect the space tangent to $V$ at $O$ in a line; 46 contains two $\tau$-planes; 47 and 48 each contains only one; in 47 the $\tau$-plane passes through $O$; in 48 it does not. The space tangent to $V$ at $O$ intersects none of the other spaces anywhere except at $O$; space 49 contains a single $\tau$-plane; space 50 contains two. Spaces 51 and 52 contain no $\tau$-planes; space 51 contains three special lines which will be described later; space 52 contains only one special line.

In examining the three-spaces with one point $O$ on $V$ we shall make what use we can of the point $O$ and the space tangent to $V$ at $O$.

There is one obvious $S_{3}$ lying in the space tangent to $V$ at $O$. Any plane in it not on $O$ is a $\tau$-plane with no point on $V$, and hence is $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k+r m, m, 0$; it is in the space tangent to $V$ at
$0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$. The space determined by the plane and the point is 43 ; it may be readily verified that there is no other point on $V$.

There is no $S_{3}$ with just one point on $V$ which is the space tangent to $V$ at a point not in $S_{3}$. Such an $S_{3}$ would contain $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ above and the point $O=P_{4}$ for which $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0$, and

$$
a_{1} a_{8}-a_{2} a_{6}=0, \quad a_{1} a_{9}-a_{2} a_{7}=0, \quad a_{5} a_{10}-a_{6} a_{9}=0
$$

The point $k, l, m, n$ whose coordinates satisfy $k+a_{1} n=l+a_{7} n=m+a_{6} n=$ 0 is also a point of $V$. This point is different from $O$ unless $a_{1}=a_{6}=a_{7}=0$. If they are zero, then $l=m+a_{9} n=k+r m+a_{8} n=0$ is on $V$ and is different from $O$ unless $a_{8}=a_{9}=0$ also. The only nonzero coordinate of $P_{4}$ is thus seen to be $a_{5}$, and the space is 43 .

We consider next $S_{3}$ 's which contain $O$ and a plane tangent to $V$ at $O$. This plane is $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0,0$. It contains no $\Sigma$-line except the lines through $O . \quad P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ can be selected arbitrarily in the plane except that $P_{1} P_{2}$ does not pass through $P_{3} . S_{3}$ will contain the point $P_{4}=$ $a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, 0, a_{6}, 0,0, a_{9}, a_{10}$. Not all of $a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{10}$ are zero. We consider first those $S_{3}$ 's for which $a_{4} \neq 0 . \quad T_{3}$ can be applied to make $a_{10}^{\prime}=0$; $T_{2}$ can be applied to make $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}, a_{9}^{\prime}=0$; and then $T_{1}$ can be applied to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{2}^{\prime}=0$. We then have

$$
P_{4}=0,0, r, 1,0,1,0,0,0,0
$$

The point $k, l, m, n=0, r, 1, r^{2}$ is on $V$. Hence $S_{3}$ has more than one point on $V$ unless $r=0$. If $r=0, S_{3}$ is 44 . The $\tau$-planes in $S_{3}$ are $b_{1} k-b_{2} n=0$, each in the space tangent to $V$ at $b_{1}, b_{2}, 0,0, b_{5}, 0, b_{7}, 0, b_{9}, 0$ which must be on $V$; they constitute a pencil on $P_{2} P_{3}$.

Those $S_{3}$ 's which contain $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ above and a $P_{4}$ which has $a_{4}=0$ give nothing new. The interchange of $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ interchanges $a_{3}$ and $a_{4}$ in $P_{4}$, and hence it changes $S_{3}$ into one we have just considered unless $a_{3}=a_{4}=0$, and in that case $S_{3}$ has at least two points on $V$.

In any other $S_{3}$ with just one point on $V$ and a $\tau$-plane tangent to $V$ at $O$, the $\tau$-plane must be a $\Sigma$-plane. Any other plane on $O$ contains a $\Sigma$-line necessarily tangent to $V$ at $O$. If such other plane is a $\tau$-plane, it can be taken to be

$$
k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k, 0,0
$$

The line $P_{1} P_{3}$ is the tangent line; $P_{2}$ is any point in the plane not on $P_{1} P_{3}$. $P_{4}$ can be selected in the $\Sigma$-plane $P_{1} P_{3} P_{4} . \quad R_{4}$ is then $R_{1}$ which is $x_{5}=0$. Therefore $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0,0$. Since $P_{4}$ is in the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}, a_{2}=0$; also, $P_{4}$ can be moved along the line $P_{1} P_{4}$ to make $a_{8}=0$ and along the line $P_{3} P_{4}$ to make $a_{6}=0$. Hence $S_{3}$ contains the point $P_{4}^{\prime}=a_{1}, 0, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0,0$. If $a_{1} \neq 0, T_{2}$ can be applied to change it to zero. Then $S_{3}$ is 45 . It contains the $\tau$-planes $b_{1} k-b_{6} l+b_{5} n=0$, each in the space tangent to $V$ at $b_{1}, 0,0,0, b_{5}, b_{6}, 0,0,0,0$.

Any other $S_{3}$ which contains a $\Sigma$-plane on $O$ can contain no $\tau$-plane on $O$
except that one. Hence any other plane on $O$ is not a $\tau$-plane but contains a line tangent to $V$ at $O$; it is $k, l, m, 0,0,0, l, k, 0,0$. The tangent line is $l=0$; it contains $P_{1}$ and is in the $\Sigma$-plane. If $P_{4}$ is selected in the $\Sigma$-plane, then $R_{4}=R_{1}$, and $P_{4}$ has $a_{4}=a_{7}=a_{9}=a_{10}=0$. Since $P_{3} P_{4}$ is tangent to $V, a_{5}=0$. It is easy to verify that $S_{3}$ contains a second point on $V$ : viz., $k=m=l+a_{2} n=0$, if $a_{2} \neq 0$, or another point on $P_{1} P_{4}$ if $a_{2}=0$.

For all other $S_{3}$ 's with just one point on $V$ the space tangent to $V$ at $O$ can intersect $S_{3}$ in at most a line. We consider now the possibility that $S_{3}$ contains a line tangent to $V$ at $O$ and contains a $\tau$-plane on that line. The $\tau$-plane can be taken to be $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k, 0,0$. If $S_{3}$ contains any other $\Sigma$-line, the $\Sigma$-line does not cut $P_{1} P_{3}$, for then $S_{3}$ would contain a $\Sigma$-plane. Since $P_{2}$ is arbitrary in $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$, we may assume the $\Sigma$-line is $P_{2} P_{4}$ where $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, 0, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0, a_{9}, 0$. If $a_{4}=0$, the line $P_{1} P_{4}$ contains a point of $V$. Since $a_{4} \neq 0, T_{2}$ can be applied to remove $a_{2}$ and $a_{9}$, and then $T_{1}$ to remove $a_{1} . \quad S_{3}$ is 46 ; it contains only the two $\tau$-planes $k=0$ and $n=0$.

We now consider an $S_{3}$ with a line tangent to $V$ at $O$, with a $\tau$-plane on that tangent line, but with no $\Sigma$-line except the tangent line. The $\tau$-plane is $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l, k, 0,0$. The line tangent to $V$ at $O=P_{3}$ is $l=0 . \quad S_{3}$ contains the point $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0, a_{9}, a_{10}$. Not all of $a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{10}$ are zero, for otherwise $S_{3}$ would be 43 .
(a) Suppose $a_{4} \neq 0 . \quad T_{3}$ can be used to remove $a_{10} ; T_{2}$ can be used to make $a_{2}=a_{9}=0 ; T_{1}$ can be used to remove $a_{1} ; T_{10}$ can be used to remove $a_{3}$. $S_{3}$ is 46 .
(b) Suppose $a_{4}=0, a_{10} \neq 0 . \quad T_{3}$ will make $a_{3}=0$, and $T_{2}$ will make $a_{1}=$ $a_{2}=0$. Then $P_{4}^{\prime}=0,0,0,0, a_{5}, 0,0,0, a_{9}, a_{10}$. If $a_{9} \neq 0$, the line $P_{3} P_{4}^{\prime}$ contains two points of $V$. If $a_{9}=0, S_{3}$ is readily seen to contain a pencil of $\tau$-planes and to be 44.
(c) Suppose $a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. Then $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, 0,0,0, a_{9}, 0$. $a_{9} \neq 0$, for otherwise $P_{1} P_{4}$ would be a $\Sigma$-line. $T_{10}$ can be selected to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{8}^{\prime}, a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}$. Hence $S_{3}$ contains $P_{4}^{\prime}=0,0, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, 0,0,0, a_{9}, 0$. Then $T_{1}$ with $a=0$ can be selected to make $a_{5}=0 . \quad S_{3}$ is 47 ; it contains only one $\tau$-plane.

We have so far determined all the $S_{3}$ 's with one point $O$ on $V$ which contain a line tangent to $V$ at $O$ and a $\tau$-plane on the tangent line. Any other $S_{3}$ with a line tangent to $V$ at $O$ will contain the plane

$$
k, l, m, 0,0,0, l, k, 0,0
$$

which is not a $\tau$-plane, but which contains the tangent line $l=0 . \quad S_{3}$ contains the point $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, 0, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0,0, a_{9}, a_{10}$. We now apply transformation $T_{8}$, which leaves $P_{1}, P_{2}$, and $P_{3}$ unchanged.
(a) If $a_{9} \neq 0, T_{8}$ will remove $a_{4}$ and $a_{10}$. In this case $m=0$ is a $\tau$-plane not on $O$; such an $S_{3}$ is different from any we have obtained previously.
(b) If $a_{9}=0, a_{5} \neq 0, T_{8}$ will remove $a_{1}$ and $a_{6} . P_{4}=$ $0, a_{2}, 0, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0, a_{10}$.
(c) If $a_{5}=a_{9}=0$, then $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, 0, a_{4}, 0, a_{6}, 0,0,0, a_{10}$. Here the plane $l=0$ is tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$. Hence, we need consider cases (a) and (b) only.

Case (a). $T_{3}$ will remove $a_{2}$, and $T_{1}$ will remove $a_{5}$. Then, $P_{4}^{\prime}=$ $a_{1}, 0,0,0,0, a_{6}, 0,0, a_{9}, 0$. The unit point in $X$ can be chosen to make $a_{1}=a_{9}$, if $a_{1} \neq 0$, but $a_{6}$ cannot at the same time be made equal to $a_{9}$ unless $a_{1}^{3}=a_{6}^{2} a_{9}$. If $a_{1}=a_{6}=a_{9}$, or if $a_{1}=0, S_{3}$ has a second point on $V$. If $a_{6}=0, S_{3}$ contains the $\Sigma$-line $P_{2} P_{4}$. Hence, $S_{3}$ is

$$
k+n, l, m, 0,0, r n, l, k, n, 0, \quad x^{3}+x^{2}-r^{2} \text { irreducible. }
$$

This is 48; it contains the $\tau$-plane $m=0$. The irreducibility of $x^{3}+x^{2}-r^{2}$ is required for there to be no second point on $V$.

Case (b). $\quad a_{10} \neq 0$, for otherwise $P_{2} P_{4}$ would be a $\Sigma$-line. If $a_{4} \neq 0, T_{3}$ would make $a_{10}=0$. Hence, $a_{4}=0$. The unit point can be chosen to give $P_{4}$ one of the forms

$$
\text { (1) } 0,1,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1, \quad \text { (2) } 0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,1 \text {, }
$$

$$
\text { (3) } 0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1,
$$

depending on the zeros of $a_{2}$ and $a_{5}$. In cases (1) and (2), $S_{3}$ has two points on $V$; in case (3), the plane $l=0$ is a $\tau$-plane on the tangent line, and $S_{3}$ is 47 .

The remaining $S_{3}$ 's with one point on $V$ will contain no line tangent to $V$ at $O$. Such an $S_{3}$ contains the plane $k, l, 0,0,0, m, l+m, k, 0,0$ and a point $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0, a_{9}, a_{10}$. Not all of $a_{3}, a_{4}$, and $a_{10}$ are zero, for otherwise $S_{3}$ would lie in the space tangent to $V$ at $0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$.
(a) Suppose $a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. If $a_{9}=0$, the line $P_{1} P_{4}$ is a $\Sigma$-line, and since $P_{1}$ is on the $\Sigma$-line $l+m=n=0, S_{3}$ contains a $\Sigma$-plane not on $P_{3}$ and hence contains another point of $V$. Since $a_{9} \neq 0, T_{11}$ with $a_{2}-a_{9} a=0$ removes $a_{2} ; T_{2}$ will remove $a_{1}$; and $T_{1}$ will remove $a_{5}$. The unit point can be chosen so that $P_{4}=0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0,1,0 . \quad S_{3}$ is space 49 ; it contains a single $\tau$-plane and has no line tangent to $V$.
(b) Suppose $a_{4} \neq 0$. If not both $a_{4}$ and $a_{10}$ are zero, we may suppose $a_{4} \neq$ 0. $T_{11}$ can be used to make $a_{10}=0 ; T_{2}$ will remove $a_{9}$; and $T_{1}$ will remove $a_{1}$. Hence, $P_{4}=0, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0,0,0,0,0 . S_{3}$ contains two $\tau$-planes: $n=0$ and $k=0$. If $a_{3} \neq a_{4}, S_{3}$ contains no line tangent to $V$, and hence is different from 46. We may apply $T_{12}$ to remove $a_{3}$, and then choose the unit point so that $P_{4}=0, r, 0,-1,1,0,0,0,0,0$. If $r=0, S_{3}$ is 50 which is different from any $S_{3}$ previously obtained. If $r \neq 0$ and $S_{3}$ has no point except $P_{3}$ on $V$, it contains two $\tau$-planes on $P_{3}$, and an interchange of the $\tau$-planes will put $S_{3}$ into 50 . We shall not carry out this change, but will point out the relations that must be considered in doing it.

The space $k, l, 0,-n, n, m, l+m, k, 0,0$ contains two $\tau$-planes: $k=0$ and $n=0$. The line $l+m=n=0$ is the $\Sigma$-line in one of them; the line
$P_{2} P_{4}$ is the $\Sigma$-line in the other. The line $P_{2} P_{3}$ is special, the intersection of the two $\tau$-planes. The two $\Sigma$-lines in the $\tau$-planes determine two special points on the line $P_{2} P_{3}$, their intersections with $P_{2} P_{3}$. The point $P_{2}$ is therefore uniquely determined as the intersection of the line in both $\tau$-planes with the $\Sigma$-line in one of them. Every point of a $\Sigma$-line determines another point of it, the point conjugate to it with respect to its "imaginary" intersections with $V . \dot{P}_{2}$ and $P_{4}$ are conjugate points of the $\Sigma$-line in $k=0$; $P_{1}$ and $(0,1,-1,0)$ are conjugate points of the $\Sigma$-line in $n=0$, the second point being the intersection of the $\Sigma$-line with $P_{2} P_{3}$. Thus the coordinate system in $S_{3}$ is determined as soon as we decide in which of the $\tau$-planes to take $P_{1}$. In the case above with $r \neq 0$, a change of coordinates required by selecting $P_{1}$ in the plane $k=0$ puts $S_{3}$ into 50 .

Any $S_{3}$ with one point $O$ on $V$, other than those so far obtained, will have no $\tau$-plane. Any plane on $O$ will be one or the other of types 14 and 15 of the list of planes. We shall show first that $S_{3}$ always contains a plane of type 15.

Suppose $S_{3}$ contains a plane of type $14: k, l, m,-m, 0,0, l, k, 0,0$. Then $S_{3}$ contains the point $P_{4}=0,0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, a_{10}$. Any point in $S_{3}$ is

$$
k, l, m,-m+a_{4} n, a_{5} n, a_{6} n, l+a_{7} n, k+a_{8} n, a_{9} n, a_{10} n
$$

The points of intersection of $S_{3}$ with the space tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$ satisfy $a_{5} n=k+\left(a_{8}+a_{9}\right) n=l+\left(a_{6}+a_{7}\right) n=0 . \quad S_{3}$ has no line tangent to $V$ at $P_{3}$ and hence $a_{5} \neq 0$. Then $a$ and $b$ in $T_{16}$ can be selected to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{8}^{\prime}$, $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}$, and consequently $S_{3}$ contains $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ and

$$
P_{4}=0,0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0,0, a_{9}, a_{10}
$$

For a point $P$ in $S_{3}$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=k^{2}-a_{6} l n+a_{5} m n \\
& B_{2}=a_{9} k n-l^{2}-a_{5} m n+a_{4} a_{5} n^{2} \\
& B_{3}=a_{10} k n-l m-a_{6} m n+a_{4} a_{6} n^{2} \\
& B_{4}=a_{10} l n-k m+a_{4} k n-a_{9} m n \\
& B_{5}=k l+\left(a_{5} a_{10}-a_{6} a_{9}\right) n^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Using the relation $B_{5} x_{1}-B_{4} x_{2}+B_{3} x_{3}-B_{2} x_{4}+B_{1} x_{5}=0$, a point in $X$ determines a quadric $Q$ in $S_{3}$. The point $P_{3}$, being on $V$, determines a line $p_{3}$ in $X$; the points of $p_{3}$ determine the quadrics of a special pencil in $S_{3}$. The line $p_{3}$ is $\left\{\begin{array}{l}1,0,0,0,0 \\ 0,0,0,1,-1\end{array}\right.$. The corresponding pencil of quadrics is determined by

$$
k l+\left(a_{5} a_{10}-a_{6} a_{9}\right) n^{2}=0, \quad k^{2}+a_{9} k n-l^{2}-a_{6} l n+a_{4} a_{5} n^{2}=0
$$

The first of these two quadrics intersects each of the planes $k=0$ and $l=0$ in a line through $P_{3}$. Hence, both planes are of type 15.

We have thus shown that $S_{3}$ contains the plane

$$
k, l, 0,0,0,0, l, k, 0, m
$$

$S_{3}$ contains the point $P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0$. Not both $a_{3}$ and $a_{4}$ are zero, for then $S_{3}$ would contain a $\tau$-plane; $a_{5} \neq 0$, for otherwise the line $P_{3} P_{4}$ would be tangent to $V$ at $P_{3} . \quad T_{4}$ can be used to make $a_{1}^{\prime}=a_{8}^{\prime}$ and $a_{2}^{\prime}=a_{7}^{\prime}$. Hence we may assume $P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0,0, a_{9}, 0$. This is as far as we can go in reducing $P_{4}$ without changing the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$. We shall now find a special line in $S_{3}$ and making use of it determine a canonical form.

We examine the special pencil of quadrics in $S_{3}$ determined by the line $p_{3}$ in $X$. For a point $P$ in $S_{3}$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
B_{1} & =k^{2}-a_{6} l n+a_{3} a_{5} n^{2} \\
B_{2} & =a_{9} k n-l^{2}+a_{4} a_{5} n^{2} \\
B_{3} & =k m-a_{3} l n+a_{4} a_{6} n^{2} \\
B_{4} & =l m+a_{4} k n-a_{3} a_{9} n^{2} \\
B_{5} & =k l+a_{5} m n-a_{6} a_{9} n^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The line $p_{3}$ is $\left\{\begin{array}{l}0,0,0,1,0 \\ 0,0,0,0,1\end{array}\right.$. The quadrics of the pencil are

$$
k^{2}+a_{9} \lambda k n-\lambda l^{2}-a_{6} l n+a_{5}\left(a_{3}+a_{4} \lambda\right) n^{2}=0
$$

These quadrics are all cones with vertex at $P_{3}$. The condition that the quadric given by $\lambda$ be a pair of planes is that

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{9}^{2} \lambda^{3}+3 a_{4} a_{5} \lambda^{2}+3 a_{3} a_{5} \lambda-a_{6}^{2}=0 \tag{A}
\end{equation*}
$$

have a root in $\mathrm{GF}(p)$. We shall show that this root exists.
So far we have not used to the full the fact that $S_{3}$ intersects $V$ only at $P_{3}$. The conditions that $P$ be on $V$ are that $B_{i}=0, i=1, \cdots, 5$. From each of the pairs $B_{1}=B_{2}=0$ and $B_{3}=B_{4}=0$ it follows that $a_{4} k^{2}+a_{3} l^{2}-$ $a_{3} a_{9} k n-a_{4} a_{6} l n=0$. Hence if we solve $B_{2}=0$ for $k$ in terms of $l$ and $n$, use that value of $k$ in $B_{1}=0$, and solve $B_{4}=0$ for $m$, we will have a set of values of $k, l, m, n$ which satisfy the first four equations. The equation obtained from $B_{1}=0$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
l^{4}-2 a_{4} a_{5} l^{2} n^{2}-a_{6} a_{9}^{2} l n^{3}+\left(a_{4}^{2} a_{5}^{2}+a_{3} a_{5} a_{9}^{2}\right) n^{4}=0 \tag{B}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is also the condition that $k, l, m, n$ satisfy $B_{5}=0$. The condition that $S_{3}$ intersect $V$ only at $P_{3}$ is that (B) have no solution in GF( $p$ ). Thus (B) must be either an irreducible quartic, or else the product of two irreducible
quadratics. In either case the resolvent cubic
(C) $t^{3}+2 a_{4} a_{5} t^{2}-4\left(a_{4}^{2} a_{5}^{2}+a_{3} a_{5} a_{9}^{2}\right) t-\left(a_{4}^{3} a_{5}^{3}+a_{3} a_{4} a_{5}^{2} a_{9}^{2}+a_{6}^{2} a_{9}^{4}\right)=0$
of (B) has a root in $\operatorname{GF}(p){ }^{17}$
There exists a transformation $t=(a \lambda+b) /(c \lambda+d), a, b, c, d$ in $\operatorname{GF}(p)$, which changes (C) into (A). ${ }^{18}$ Hence if (B) has no root in GF $p$ ), (A) has a root in $\operatorname{GF}(p)$.

The pencil of cones in $S_{3}$ determined by the line $p_{3}$ therefore contains one member which consists of a pair of planes. The line of vertices of this quadric is the special line we sought. We take $P_{1}$ on this line of vertices. Any plane on $P_{1} P_{3}$ which is not a plane of the quadric determined by the root of (A) in question is cut by the pencil of cones determined by $p_{3}$ in a pencil of conics one of which is the line $P_{1} P_{3}$ counted twice. Hence, any such plane is of the type of 15 of the list of planes and may therefore be taken to be $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ above. The cone $B_{2}=0$ intersects the plane $n=0$ in the parabola $l^{2}=0$ which is the line $P_{1} P_{3}$ counted twice. The cone $B_{2}=0$ intersects the plane $l=0$ in the conic $a_{9} k n+a_{4} a_{5} n^{2}=0$; since this is the parabola $n^{2}=0$, it follows that $a_{9}=0$. With this choice of coordinate system the equation (B) above becomes $\left(l^{2}-a_{4} a_{5} n^{2}\right)^{2}=0$. Since (B) has no linear factor in $\operatorname{GF}(p)$, it follows that $a_{4} a_{5}$ is not a square. Moreover, the quadric $B_{2}=0$ is $l^{2}-a_{4} a_{5} n^{2}=0$ and consists of two "imaginary" planes; the only points on it are the vertices. Any plane on $P_{1} P_{3}$ will therefore serve for $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ above, but when the plane is chosen, the locations of $P_{1}, P_{2}$, and $P_{4}$ are determined.

The cones of the special pencil determined by $p_{3}$ are

$$
k^{2}-a_{6} l n+\lambda l^{2}+a_{5}\left(a_{3}-a_{4} \lambda\right) n^{2}=0
$$

The matrix of the conic intersection of the cone with $P_{1} P_{2} P_{4}$ is

$$
\left[\begin{array}{ccc}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \lambda & 3 a_{6} \\
0 & 3 a_{6} & a_{5}\left(a_{3}-a_{4} \lambda\right)
\end{array}\right]
$$

Setting the determinant of this matrix equal to zero and solving for $\lambda$ we obtain the $\lambda$ 's which give quadrics consisting of one or two planes. The rank of the matrix is at least two unless $a_{3}=a_{6}=0$, in which case the plane $k=0$ is a $\tau$-plane. Therefore $a_{3}$ and $a_{6}$ are not both zero. One of the degenerate

[^13]cones is given by $\lambda=\infty$; the others are given by $\lambda$ 's which satisfy
$$
a_{4} a_{5} \lambda^{2}-a_{3} a_{5} \lambda+2 a_{6}^{2}=0
$$

The discriminant of this quadratic, $a_{3}^{2} a_{5}^{2}-a_{4} a_{5} a_{6}^{2}$, cannot be zero since it is the sum of two squares not both zero. ${ }^{19}$ Hence, the quadratic has two distinct roots, both or neither in $\operatorname{GF}(p)$. There are two new $S_{3}$ 's corresponding to these two possibilities.

We consider first the case where the special pencil of cones contains three degenerate members. Two of them must each consist of a pair of imaginary planes, for otherwise $S_{3}$ would have points on $V$ besides $P_{3}$. We may take $P_{2}$ to be on the line of vertices of the second degenerate cone. Then the cone $k^{2}-a_{6} l n+a_{3} a_{5} n^{2}=0$ cuts the plane $k=0$ in a parabola, and hence $a_{6}=0$. A choice of the unit point puts $S_{3}$ in the form 51.

When the special pencil of cones contains only one degenerate member, the one given by $\lambda=\infty$, the number $a_{3}^{2} a_{5}^{2}-a_{4} a_{5} a_{6}^{2}$ must be a not-square, and hence neither $a_{3}$ nor $a_{6}$ is zero. A proper selection of the unit point will put $P_{4}$ into one of

$$
0,0,1,1,-1, r, 0,0,0,0, \quad 0,0,1,-1,1, r, 0,0,0,0
$$

depending on whether $a_{3} a_{5}$ is not or is a square; in either case $1+r^{2}$ is not a square. There are $(p+1) / 2$ possibilities for $r$, and hence there are $p+1$ possibilities for $P_{4}$. We recall that the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ is arbitrary on the line $P_{1} P_{3}$. There are $p+1$ planes in $S_{3}$ on $P_{1} P_{3}$. For a given $S_{3}$, the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ can be selected ${ }^{20}$ to give $P_{4}$ any one of the $p+1$ forms listed above. Hence 52 is a canonical form for $S_{3}$.

## 6. Three-spaces with no point on $V$

53. $k, l, m, 0, m, n, l, k+n, n, 0$.
54. $k, l, 0,2 n, m+3 n, n, l, k, 0, m$.

Space 53 contains the $\tau$-plane $m=0$ and the $\Sigma$-line $P_{1} P_{3}$; space 54 contains no $\tau$-plane and no $\Sigma$-line.

We shall prove first that an $S_{3}$ with no point on $V$ contains a $\tau$-plane and a $\Sigma$-line, or it contains neither. In an $S_{3}$ with no point on $V$ every plane is of one of the types $7,8,9$ of the list of planes. If $S_{3}$ contains more than one $\tau$-plane, the intersection of two of them is a $\Sigma$-line; hence the theorem is true, or else $S_{3}$ contains not more than one $\tau$-plane. Likewise, if $S_{3}$ contains more than one $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$-line, it contains a $\tau$-plane. To prove this, let $k, l, m, 0, m, 0, l, k, 0,0$

[^14]be a plane on one $\Sigma$-line. For this canonical form $P_{2}$ can be any point in the plane not on the $\Sigma$-line $P_{1} P_{3}$. Hence if $S_{3}$ contains a second $\Sigma$-line, it may be taken to pass through $P_{2} . P_{4}$ may be selected on the second $\Sigma$-line, and hence $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, 0, a_{4}, a_{5}, 0, a_{7}, 0, a_{9}, 0$. If $a_{9}=0$, then $k=0$ is a $\tau$-plane. If $a_{9} \neq 0$, transformation $T_{13}$ can be used to remove $a_{4}$. Then $m+a_{3}^{\prime} n=$ 0 is a $\tau$-plane. Hence, $S_{3}$ contains not more than one $\tau$-plane and not more than one $\Sigma$-line, or else it contains both a $\tau$-plane and a $\Sigma$-line.

We now show that if $S_{3}$ contains a $\Sigma$-line it contains a $\tau$-plane. $S_{3}$ contains a plane which is not a $\tau$-plane and is not on the $\Sigma$-line; it may be taken to be $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m$. This plane contains the uniquely defined conic $C$ : $m^{2}-2 k l=0$. The $\Sigma$-line intersects this plane (a) on $C$, (b) outside $C$, or (c) inside $C$.
(a) The $\Sigma$-line passes through $P_{1}$. Then $P_{4}$ on the $\Sigma$-line is

$$
a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, a_{6}, 0, a_{8}, 0,0
$$

Then $l+a_{2} n=0$ is a $\tau$-plane.
(b) The $\Sigma$-line passes through $P_{3} . \quad P_{4}$ has $a_{1}=a_{2}=a_{3}=a_{4}=0$, and $m+a_{10} n=0$ is a $\tau$-plane.
(c) The $\Sigma$-line passes through $1,1,0,0,0,0,1,1,0,0$, which is inside $C$. Then $P_{4}=a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3},-a_{3}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{1}-a_{6}, a_{8}, a_{2}-a_{8}, a_{3}$. This is exactly the situation that was discussed in determining the space 36 ; it was shown there that $k+l+\left(a_{1}+a_{2}\right) n=0$ is a $\tau$-plane. Hence, if $S_{3}$ has no point on $V$ and contains a $\Sigma$-line, it contains a $\tau$-plane.

Now assume that $S_{3}$ contains a $\tau$-plane. $S_{3}$ contains the plane $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m$. The $\tau$-plane intersects this plane in a line which is (a) a secant of $C$, (b) a tangent to $C$, or (c) a line through $P_{3}$ not intersecting $C$.
(a) Let the $\tau$-plane contain $P_{1} P_{2}$, and select $P_{4}$ on it. Then $P_{4}=$ $a_{1}, a_{2}, 0,0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0$. The line $k+a_{1} n=l+a_{2} n=0$ is a $\Sigma$-line.
(b) Let the $\tau$-plane contain $P_{1} P_{3}$ and select $P_{4}$ on it.

$$
P_{4}=a_{1}, 0, a_{3}, 0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, 0, a_{10}
$$

The $\Sigma$-line is $l+a_{7} n=m+a_{10} n=0$.
(c) Let the $\tau$-plane contain $P_{3}$ and $1,-1,0,0,0,0,-1,1,0,0$. The $\tau$-plane is in the space tangent to $V$ at $0,0,0,0,0,1,-1,-1,1,0$. It contains $P_{4}=0,0, a_{3},-a_{3}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0, a_{6}+a_{7}+a_{8}+a_{9}=0$. For any point $P$ in the $\tau$-plane

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=k^{2}+\left(a_{6}+a_{8}\right) k n+a_{3} m n+a_{3} a_{5} n^{2} \\
& B_{2}=a_{9} k n-k^{2}+a_{7} k n-a_{3} m n-a_{3} a_{5} n^{2}, \\
& B_{3}=k m+a_{3} k n-\left(a_{3} a_{6}+a_{3} a_{7}\right) n^{2}, \\
& B_{4}=-k m-a_{3} k n-\left(a_{3} a_{8}+a_{3} a_{9}\right) n^{2}, \\
& B_{5}=m^{2}+a_{5} m n-k^{2}+a_{7} k n-a_{8} k n+\left(a_{7} a_{8}-a_{6} a_{9}\right) n^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The three-space in $X$ determined by $P$ is $B_{5} x_{1}-B_{4} x_{2}+B_{3} x_{3}-B_{2} x_{4}+B_{1} x_{5}=0$. For any $k, m, n, \quad B_{1}+B_{2}=0$ and $B_{3}+B_{4}=0$. If $k, m, n$ are selected so that $B_{3}=0$ and $B_{1}=B_{5}$, then the three-space will be $x_{1}+x_{4}+x_{5}=0$, which is the three-space determined by $1,1,0,0,0,0,1,1,0,0$. The solution is $k=a_{6}+a_{7}, m=2 a_{3}, n=2$. This completes the proof that if $S_{3}$ with no point on $V$ contains a $\tau$-plane, it contains a $\Sigma$-line. Also it completes the proof of the theorem in italics above.

We now determine a canonical form for $S_{3}$ which has a $\tau$-plane and a $\Sigma$-line but has no point on $V$. Any plane on the $\Sigma$-line is $k, l, m, 0, m, 0, l, k, 0,0$, where $P_{1}$ is the intersection of the $\tau$-plane and the $\Sigma$-line and $P_{2}$ is also in the $\tau$-plane. The $\tau$-plane is in the space tangent to $V$ at $0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,0$. If $P_{4}$ is in the $\tau$-plane, then $a_{3}=a_{4}=a_{10}=0$. Since $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ are in the $\tau$-plane also, we may take

$$
P_{4}=0,0,0,0, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0
$$

The condition that $S_{3}$ have no point on $V$ is that the polynomial $f(x)=$ $a_{9} x^{3}-a_{7} x^{2}+a_{8} x-a_{6}$ be irreducible. Every suitable $S_{3}$ determines such an irreducible cubic, and every irreducible cubic determines a suitable $S_{3}$. We note that $a_{9} \neq 0$, and hence $T_{1}$ can be used to remove $a_{5}$.

By changing the unit point we may transform $f(x)$ as it is transformed by $x=d x^{\prime}$; by interchanging $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ we may transform $f(x)$ as it is transformed by $x=1 / x^{\prime}$; by means of $T_{3}$, which leaves $P_{3}$ unchanged, we may transform $f(x)$ as it is transformed by $x=x^{\prime}+a$. Therefore any $S_{3}$ with a $\Sigma$-line but no point on $V$ is space 53 .

The three-space

$$
k, l, 0,2 n, m+3 n, n, l, k, 0, m
$$

has no point on $V$ and has no $\Sigma$-line. To prove this directly is rather difficult. The following proof is instructive. For a point $P$ of $S_{3}$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=k^{2}-l n \\
& B_{2}=-l^{2}+2 m n-n^{2} \\
& B_{3}=k m+2 n^{2} \\
& B_{4}=l m+2 k n \\
& B_{5}=m^{2}+k l+3 m n
\end{aligned}
$$

The condition that there be a point on $V$ is that there exist $k, l, m, n$ which make the $B$ 's zero. If we solve $B_{1}=0$ for $l$ in terms of $k$ and $n, B_{3}=0$ for $m$ in terms of $k$ and $n$, and use these values in $B_{5}=0$, we obtain the relation $k^{5}+k n^{4}+4 n^{5}=0$. The polynomial $f(x)=x^{5}+x+4$ is irreducible. ${ }^{21}$

[^15]Hence $S_{3}$ has no point on $V$. If $f(x)$ were reducible, $S_{3}$ might still have no point on $V$, but then $f(x)$ would be the product of an irreducible quadratic and an irreducible cubic. We have seen irreducible cubics before in this discussion, in connection with $\tau$-planes with no point on $V$. If $f(x)$ were factorable but had no linear factor in $\mathrm{GF}(p)$, it is clear that $S_{3}$ would be space 53. For if $X, S, V$, and $S_{3}$ were immersed in spaces $\bar{X}, \bar{S}, \bar{V}$, and $\bar{S}_{3}$ over $\operatorname{GF}\left(p^{3}\right)$, then $\bar{S}_{3}$ would have three points on $\bar{V}$. When $f(x)$ is irreducible, then $\bar{S}_{3}$ has no points on $\bar{V}$, and hence $S_{3}$ has no $\tau$-plane.

We propose to show that any $S_{3}$ which has no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line, or, which is the same thing, any $S_{3}$ whose quintic polynomial $f(x)$ is irreducible, can be put in the form 54 . We cannot distinguish among the points of $S_{3}$, among the lines, or among the planes; we cannot distinguish among the points of a line, but we can distinguish among the points of a plane by means of the absolute conic $C$. In seeking something similar to $C$ which may aid in characterizing $S_{3}$ we shall examine some complicated relations between $S_{3}$ and $X$.

For this $S_{3}$ the equation $B_{5} x_{1}-B_{4} x_{2}+B_{3} x_{3}-B_{2} x_{4}+B_{1} x_{5}=0$ is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(m^{2}+k l+3 m n\right) x_{1}-(l m+2 k n) x_{2}+\left(k m+2 n^{2}\right) x_{3} \\
& +\left(l^{2}-2 m n+n^{2}\right) x_{4}+\left(k^{2}-l n\right) x_{5}=0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

When $k, l, m, n$ are given, this is the three-space $R$ in $X$ determined by $P$; when an arbitrary point $A=x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, x_{4}, x_{5}$ in $X$ is given, it is a quadric surface $Q$ in $S_{3}$. The points of $Q$ are the points of $S_{3}$ whose three-spaces $R$ in $X$ contain $A$. No two $R$ 's given by different $P$ 's are the same, since $S_{3}$ contains no $\Sigma$-line. The $B$ 's are linearly independent polynomials in $k, l$, $m, n$. There is thus determined a four-parameter system $W$ of quadrics in $S_{3}$. Some of the quadrics of $W$ are degenerate, and thereby a distinction can be made among the points of $X$. The locus of points in $X$ which give cones in $S_{3}$ is

$$
J:\left|\begin{array}{cccc}
x_{5} & 4 x_{1} & 4 x_{3} & 6 x_{2} \\
4 x_{1} & x_{4} & 3 x_{2} & 3 x_{5} \\
4 x_{3} & 3 x_{2} & x_{i} & 5 x_{1}-x_{4} \\
6 x_{2} & 3 x_{5} & 5 x_{1}-x_{4} & 2 x_{3}+x_{4}
\end{array}\right|=0
$$

$J$ is a manifold of dimension three and order four in $X$. A point on $J$ determines a cone in $S_{3}$, and the cone has a vertex. It is easy to see that no cone of the set $W$ has more than one vertex, and to see that every point of $S_{3}$ is the vertex of one and only one cone of the set $W$.

We prove the first statement by showing that if $W$ contains a quadric with a line of vertices, $S_{3}$ contains a $\Sigma$-line. Let $W$ contain a quadric $Q$ with a line of vertices. Any plane in $S_{3}$, in particular a plane on the line of vertices of $Q$, may be taken to be $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m . \quad S_{3}$ contains the point $P_{4}=$
$0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0$. The $B$ 's for a point $P$ in $S_{3}$ are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=k^{2}+a_{8} k n-a_{6} l n+a_{3} m n+a_{3} a_{5} n^{2} \\
& B_{2}=a_{9} k n-l^{2}-a_{7} l n+a_{4} m n+a_{4} a_{5} n^{2} \\
& B_{3}=k m-a_{3} l n+\left(a_{4} a_{6}-a_{3} a_{7}\right) n^{2} \\
& B_{4}=l m+a_{4} k n+\left(a_{4} a_{8}-a_{3} a_{9}\right) n^{2} \\
& B_{5}=m^{2}+k l+a_{7} k n+a_{8} l n+a_{5} m n+\left(a_{7} a_{8}-a_{6} a_{9}\right) n^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The matrix of any quadric of the set $W$ has for the first three columns
$\left[\begin{array}{ccc}x_{5} & 4 x_{1} & 4 x_{3} \\ 4 x_{1} & x_{4} & 3 x_{2} \\ 4 x_{3} & 3 x_{2} & x_{1} \\ 4\left(a_{7} x_{1}-a_{4} x_{2}-a_{9} x_{4}+a_{8} x_{5}\right) & 4\left(a_{8} x_{1}-a_{3} x_{3}+a_{7} x_{4}-a_{6} x_{5}\right) & 4\left(a_{5} x_{1}-a_{4} x_{4}+a_{3} x_{5}\right)\end{array}\right]$

Now the line of vertices of $Q$ in the plane $n=0$ has one of three positions: (1) it is tangent to $C$ and may be taken to be $P_{1} P_{3}$; (2) it intersects $C$ in two points and may be taken to be $P_{1} P_{2}$; or (3) it passes through $P_{3}$ and does not intersect $C$; it may be taken to be $\left\{\begin{array}{l}1,-1,0,0 \\ 0,0,1,0\end{array}\right.$. In case (1) the quadric is given by the point $x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, x_{4}, x_{5}=0,0,0,1,0$. Its equation is $B_{2}=0$, and since it consists of two planes we have $a_{4}=a_{9}=0$. If this is so, the line $l+a_{7} n=0, m=0$ is a $\Sigma$-line. Cases (2) and (3) would require $x_{1}=\cdots=$ $x_{5}=0$. Hence $W$ contains no quadric with more than one vertex.

That an arbitrary point $P=k, l, m, n$ of $S_{3}$ be the vertex of some cone of the set $W$ requires that it be possible to select $x_{1}, \cdots, x_{5}$ so that $k, l, m, n$ are the constants of dependence of the columns of the matrix of which three columns are given just above. This gives four linear equations in the $x$ 's with coefficients linear in $k, l, m$, and $n$. Properly signed four-rowed determinants of the matrix of coefficients constitute a solution for the $x$ 's, if they are not all zeros. There is at least one solution for every $k, l, m, n$; there would be more than one if the rank of the matrix of coefficients were less than four. There is not more than one solution, as we shall now prove. Let $P$ be any point in $S_{3}$. Any plane on $P$ can be taken to be $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m . \quad P$ may be (1) on the conic $C, \quad P=P_{1}=1,0,0,0$; (2) outside $C, \quad P=P_{3}$; (3) inside $C, \quad P=1,1,0,0$. If any one of these sets of $k, l, m, n$ is used for constants of dependence of the three columns above, a set of four independent equations in the $x$ 's is obtained. Hence, in every case the solution is unique.

Let $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ be arbitrary points on the line $l$ in $S_{3}$, and let the three-spaces in $X$ determined by them be $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$ respectively. $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$ intersect in a plane $\sigma$. Every point in $\sigma$ determines a quadric in $S_{3}$ which passes through both $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$. There is thus determined in $W$ a net of quadrics on $P_{1}$ and
$P_{2}$. The line $l$ determines a point $M$ on $V$, the point such that $M P_{1} P_{2}$ is tangent to $V$ at $M . \quad M$ is the image on $V$ of a line $m$ in $\sigma$. Every point on $l$ determines a three-space in $X$ which contains $m$, and consequently the quadric in $S_{3}$ determined by a point of $m$ has the line $l$ for a ruling. Thus the points $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ determine a net of quadrics in $S_{3}$, and in that net is a pencil of quadrics each of which has $l$ for a ruling. If $A$ is a point of $m$, the quadric $Q$ has $l$ for a ruling and hence is a ruled quadric; it is a cone if $A$ is on $J$.

Now let us consider two lines $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ in $S_{3}$. They determine two lines $m_{1}$ and $m_{2}$ in $X$. If $m_{1}$ and $m_{2}$ intersect in a point $A$, the quadric $Q$ determined by $A$ has both $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ for rulings. If $m_{1}$ and $m_{2}$ do not intersect, there will be no quadric of the set $W$ which has both $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ for rulings. If $m_{1}$ and $m_{2}$ intersect, the quadric $Q$ will not be degenerate if $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ do not intersect. If $m_{1}$ and $m_{2}$ intersect and $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ intersect also, $Q$ will be a cone if $A$ is on $J$; otherwise it will be nondegenerate, and $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ will belong to different reguli on $Q$.

To study further the relations of lines and quadrics of $S_{3}$ to lines and planes of $X$, we consider the six-spaces tangent to $V$ along a ruling of $V$. For this purpose we may take the points of a ruling and the tangent spaces to be

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
M_{0}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0, & T_{0}: & x_{8}=x_{9}=x_{10}=0 \\
M_{\infty}=0,1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0, & T_{\infty}: & x_{6}=x_{7}=x_{10}=0 \\
M_{\lambda}=1, \lambda, 0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0, & T_{\lambda}: & \left\{\begin{array}{l}
-\lambda x_{6}+x_{8}=0 \\
-\lambda x_{7}+x_{9}=0,
\end{array} x_{10}=0\right.
\end{array}
$$

The six-spaces $T_{\lambda}$ are all in the eight-space $S_{8}: x_{10}=0$; the intersection of two of them is the four-space $S_{4}: x_{6}=x_{7}=x_{8}=x_{9}=x_{10}=0$. Any point in $S_{8}$ on the hyperquadric $Q_{7}: x_{6} x_{9}-x_{7} x_{8}=0, x_{10}=0$ is in some $T_{\lambda}$. Any point in two $T_{\lambda}$ 's is in $S_{4}$. Any line in $S_{4}$ contains a point on $V$.

Now let $S_{3}$ be a three-space in $S$ with no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line. Either $S_{3}$ lies wholly in $S_{8}$ or intersects it in a plane. The points of $Q_{7}$ lie in the hyperquadric in $S$ determined by $a_{5} a_{10}-a_{6} a_{9}+a_{7} a_{8}=0$, and hence its intersection with $S_{3}$ is one of the quadrics of the set $W$. The intersection of $S_{3}$ and $S_{8}$ therefore cannot be a plane. $S_{3}$ can have no more than one point in $S_{4}$, since $S_{3}$ has no point on $V . Q_{7}$ intersects $S_{3}$ in a quadric $Q$. If one $T_{\lambda}$ intersects $Q$ in a line, then every $T_{\lambda}$ intersects it in a line. If two lines in distinct $T_{\lambda}$ 's intersect, the intersection is in $S_{4}$ and hence is on each of the rulings of $Q$, and $Q$ is a cone. If $Q$ has no point in $S_{4}$, then the rulings of $Q$ cut out by the $T_{\lambda}$ 's do not intersect, and $Q$ is not degenerate.

Now let us consider the cone $Q_{1}$ in $S_{3}$ with vertex at an arbitrary point $P_{1}$. The rulings of $Q_{1}$ are in the tangent spaces at points of a ruling of $V$, and these points on $V$ represent the lines of a pencil in $X$. Thus a point $P_{1}$ in $S_{3}$ determines a plane $\sigma$ in $X$. Every point in $\sigma$ determines a quadric on $P_{1}$ in $S_{3}$; the vertex $A_{1}$ of the pencil determines $Q_{1}$, and $A_{1}$ is on $J$. Any other point $A_{2}$ in
$\sigma$ determines a quadric in $S_{3}$ which has a ruling in common with $Q_{1}$. All the quadrics of the set $W$ which contain a particular ruling of $Q_{1}$ have been shown to belong to a pencil and hence are given by a particular line in $\sigma$ on $A_{1}$. Consequently all the quadrics of the set $W$ that intersect $Q_{1}$ in a ruling belong to the net determined by the points of $\sigma$.

Let $A_{2}$ be a second point on the intersection of $\sigma$ and $J$. Then $A_{2}$ determines a cone $Q_{2}$ in $S_{3}$; let the vertex of $Q_{2}$ be $P_{2}$. The cone $Q_{2}$ determines a plane $\sigma^{\prime}$ in $X$. The line $P_{1} P_{2}$ is a ruling of both $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$; it determines the line $A_{1} A_{2}$ in $X$, and hence $A_{1} A_{2}$ is in both $\sigma$ and $\sigma^{\prime}$. We shall show that the two planes coincide. Consider a plane $\rho$ on $P_{1} P_{2}$ and not tangent to $Q_{1}$ or $Q_{2}$. This plane cuts out rulings $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$, not $P_{1} P_{2}$, on $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$ respectively; let the intersection of $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ be $P . \quad P, P_{1}$, and $P_{2}$ determine the three-spaces $R, R_{1}$, and $R_{2}$ in $X$. The intersection of $R$ and $R_{1}$ is the plane whose points give all the quadrics of the set $W$ which pass through $P$ and $P_{1}$. It contains the line $A A_{1}$, which is a line of $\sigma$ corresponding to the ruling $P P_{1}$ of $Q_{1}$, and, since $P$ is on $Q_{2}$, the point $A_{2}$. The plane of intersection of $R$ and $R_{1}$ is therefore $\sigma$ which is not dependent on the choice of $\rho$ and hence not dependent on $R$. From this it follows that $\sigma$ and $\sigma^{\prime}$ are the same, and that $\sigma$ is the intersection of $R_{1}$ and $R_{2}$.

The plane $\sigma$ was determined as the plane of the pencil of lines in $X$ determined by the rulings of the cone $Q_{1} ; \sigma$ has been shown to have the same relation to $Q_{2}$. There are thus determined two pencils of lines in $\sigma$ with vertices at $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ respectively. The plane $\rho$ in $S_{3}$ on $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ contains a ruling of $Q_{1}$ and a ruling of $Q_{2}$, and hence determines lines in $\sigma$ on $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ respectively. The pencil of planes on $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ thus sets up a projectivity between the two pencils of lines in $\sigma$. The line $A_{1} A_{2}$, which is in both pencils, is not self-corresponding in the projectivity unless the cones $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$ have a common tangent plane. Corresponding lines of the two projective pencils in $\sigma$ intersect in a conic if $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$ do not have a common tangent plane; otherwise they intersect in a line.

Let the intersection of two corresponding lines of the pencils on $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ be $A$. $A$ determines a quadric $Q$ in $S_{3}$. $Q$ has each of the lines $l_{1}$ and $l_{2}$ in $\rho$ as a ruling; these rulings intersect, and therefore $Q$ is a cone with vertex at $P$. Hence, if $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$ do not have a common tangent plane, the points of $\sigma$ which are on $J$ are points of a conic, and the corresponding cones in $S_{3}$ have vertices on the cubic curve of intersection of $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$. The quadrics determined by the points of $\sigma$ all contain this cubic curve.

Any line in $\sigma$ is imaged in $S_{3}$ on a point of $V$ which is such that the space tangent to $V$ there intersects $S_{3}$ in a line. If $A^{\prime}$ is any point of such a line and $Q^{\prime}$ is the corresponding quadric, the rulings of $Q^{\prime}$ in common with $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$ respectively belong to the same regulus of $Q^{\prime}$, the rulings of this regulus determine the lines in $\sigma$ on $A^{\prime}$, and one of those lines is the one in question.

If the projective pencils of lines on $A_{1}$ and $A_{2}$ in $\sigma$ were perspective, then $\sigma$ would contain a line each of whose points would determine a cone in $S_{3}$, and
the vertices of the cones would lie on a line $l \operatorname{not} P_{1} P_{2}$. Then the cone $Q_{1}$ would contain the plane $P_{1} l$. This is not possible since $W$ contains no quadric with a plane on it.

Also, there is no cone $Q_{1}$ of the set $W$ whose plane $\sigma$ contains no second point of $J$. Let $A$ be a point of $\sigma$; then $A$ determines a quadric $Q$ with a ruling in common with $Q_{1}$. Let $\rho$ be a plane in $S_{3}$ on the common ruling of $Q_{1}$ and $Q$, and let $\rho$ cut $Q_{1}$ in a second ruling, which intersects $Q$ at a point $P$. Through $P$ there is a ruling of $Q$ of the regulus to which the common ruling of $Q_{1}$ and $Q$ belongs. The two rulings, one of $Q_{1}$ and one of $Q$, determine two lines on $A_{1}$ and $A$ respectively. The intersection of these two lines determines a quadric with two rulings of the same regulus which intersect; this quadric is therefore a cone, and it is distinct from $Q_{1}$.

Hence, we have shown
If $\sigma$ is a plane in $X$ determined by a cone of the set $W$, it intersects $J$ in a conic which is not degenerate.

If $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$ are two cones of the set $W$ and if they have a common ruling, they determine in $S_{3}$ a net of quadrics each of which has one and only one ruling in common with each other; the cones of the net are $p+1$ in number and have vertices on the cubic curve of intersection of $Q_{1}$ and $Q_{2}$.
We have also shown the following theorem about $J$ :
Every point of $J$ determines a unique plane in $X$ which intersects $J$ in a nondegenerate conic.

These planes are the double tangent planes of $J$. Each of them contains $p+1$ points of $J$, and no two have a point of $J$ in common. Their number is thus shown to be $p^{2}+1$. Since two planes of $X$ intersect in at least one point, two double tangent planes of $J$ intersect in a point $A$ which is not on $J$, and the quadric $Q$ determined by $A$ is a nondegenerate quadric with rulings. The second set of rulings on $Q$ determines a plane $\sigma$ in $X$ which contains $A$. Incidentally, we cannot distinguish one point of $J$ from another.

We note that the points of $S_{3}$ lie on $p^{2}+1$ cubic curves each of which is the intersection of a net of quadrics of the set $W$, and no two of the cubics intersect.

We note also that not every point of $X$ is on a double tangent plane. A point not on such a plane determines a quadric $Q$ which has no rulings. Such a point is $0,0,0,1,1 ; Q$ is $k^{2}-l n+l^{2}-2 m n+n^{2}=0 . \quad Q$ contains the point $k, l, m, n=0,0,1,0$; the plane tangent to $Q$ at that point is $n=0$. Points of intersection of the plane and $Q$ satisfy $k^{2}+l^{2}=0$, and hence the only point is the point of tangency.

Every cone of the set $W$ has on it a single one $K$ of the cubic curves. Every nondegenerate ruled quadric of the set $W$ has on it two of the cubic curves, $K$ and $K^{\prime}$. It is clear that if $Q$ is a cone with the vertex $P$ determined by the
point $A$ in $X$, each ruling of $Q$ intersects $K$ in $P$ and one other point, excepting the ruling determined by the tangent to the conic intersection of $J$ and the double tangent plane in which $A$ lies. This ruling is the line tangent to $K$ at the point $P$. If $Q$ is a nondegenerate quadric determined by a point $A$ outside the conic of intersection $C$ of $\sigma$ and $J$, then a line of the pencil in $\sigma$ on $A$ intersects $C$ in one, two, or no points; thus the rulings of $Q$ of the set corresponding to lines on $A$ in $\sigma$ meet $K$ in one, two, or no points. If $A$ is inside $C$, then each of these rulings meets $K$ in two or no points. The same situation holds with respect to the other set of rulings of $Q$ and the cubic $K^{\prime}$. The situation is different, however, with respect to the rulings of $Q$ determined by the pencil of lines on $A$ in $\sigma$ and the points of the cubic $K^{\prime}$. The curve $K^{\prime}$ is on $Q$, it has $p+1$ points, and no two points of $K^{\prime}$ are on the same ruling of the set determined by the lines in $\sigma$. Hence there is one point of $K^{\prime}$ on each of these rulings.

We now investigate the space 54 in the light of these relations. ${ }^{22}$ The vertices of the frame of reference in the space 54 lie on the quadric $Q_{2}: l m+$ $2 k n=0$, which is given by the point $A_{2}=0,1,0,0,0$ in $X$; the edges $P_{1} P_{2}$ and $P_{3} P_{4}$ are rulings of one regulus on $Q_{2}$, and $P_{1} P_{3}$ and $P_{2} P_{4}$ are rulings of the other. The planes in $X$ determined by these reguli are respectively $\sigma_{2}=$ $A_{2} A_{3} A_{5}$ and $\sigma_{1}=A_{1} A_{2} A_{4}$. The plane $\sigma_{2}$ intersects $J$ in the conic $C_{2}: x_{2}^{2}+$ $3 x_{3} x_{5}=0 ; A_{3}$ and $A_{5}$ are on $C_{2}$, and $A_{2}$ is the pole with respect to $C_{2}$ of the line joining them. The plane $\sigma_{1}$ intersects $J$ in the conic $C_{1}: x_{1}^{2}+4 x_{2}^{2}+3 x_{1} x_{4}=0$; $A_{4}$ is on $C_{1}$; the tangent to $C_{1}$ at $A_{4}$ passes through $A_{2} . \quad A_{1}$ is on the polar of $A_{2}$ with respect to $C_{1}$; the other intersection of this polar with $C_{1}$ is $1,0,0,2,0$.

The vertices of the cones in $S_{3}$ determined by the points of $C_{2}$ lie on the cubic curve $K_{2}$ through $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$, the vertices of the cones determined respectively by $A_{3}$ and $A_{5}$. The vertices of the cones in $S_{3}$ determined by the points of $C_{1}$ lie on the cubic $K_{1}$ through $P_{1} ; K_{1}$ intersects the line $P_{3} P_{4}$ at $0,0,1,2$. This point determines the space $x_{3}=0$ in $X$.

Let us designate the point $0,0,1,2$ by $P_{4}^{\prime}$.

$$
P_{4}^{\prime}=0,0,0,4,0,2,0,0,0,1
$$

It is on the line joining the two points of $V: 0,0,0,4,0,0,0,0,0,1$ and $0,0,0,0,0,2,0,0,0,0$. These points represent respectively the lines $\left\{\begin{array}{l}1,0,0,2,0 \\ 0,0,0,0,4\end{array}\right.$ and $\left\{\begin{array}{l}0,1,0,0,0 \\ 0,0,0,2,0\end{array}\right.$ in $X$. The points $1,0,0,2,0$ and $0,0,0,1,0$ are the points of $C_{1}$ to which tangents to $C_{1}$ can be drawn from $A_{2} . A_{1} A_{2}$ determines the ruling $P_{2} P_{4}$ of $Q_{2}$. The line $\left\{\begin{array}{l}1,0,0,2,0 \\ 0,1,0,0,0\end{array}\right.$ determines the ruling of the same set which passes through $P_{4}^{\prime}$.

[^16]We note that the relations described so far are completely determined by the choice of $A_{2}$. For any $A_{2}$ planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$ are uniquely determined, as well as conics $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$, and the polars of $A_{2}$ with respect to $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$. $A_{2}$ must be outside both $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$. The ruling $P_{2} P_{4}$ is determined by $P_{2}$, and the point $P_{4}^{\prime}$ by the tangent to $C_{1}$ through $A_{2}$.

We may look upon $A_{2}$ as being determined by the quadric $l m+2 k n=0$ of the set $W$. Any nondegenerate ruled quadric of $W$ in any $S_{3}$ which has no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line determines a point $A$ in $X$, two planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$, containing conics $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ and intersecting in $A$. If $A$ is outside both $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$, then the polars of $A$ with respect to $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ respectively intersect $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ in two points each. Each of these four points, on $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$, determines a cone with vertex on $Q$. If $P$ is the vertex of one of these cones, the two rulings of $Q$ through $P$ determine two lines in $X$, both through $A$, one in $\sigma_{1}$ and one in $\sigma_{2}$. There are thus distinguished four lines on $A$ in each of the planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$. Now, for the space $k, l, 0,2 n, m+3 n, n, l, k, 0, m$ and the quadric $l m+2 k n=0$ given by $A_{2}$ above, these two sets of four lines reduce in one plane to two and in the other to three. The vertices of the cones determined by $1,0,0,2,0$ and $0,0,0,1,0$ lie on the rulings determined by $A_{2} A_{3}$ and $A_{2} A_{5}$, and the vertices of the cones determined by $A_{3}$ and $A_{5}$ lie on rulings of $Q$ determined by $A_{2} A_{4}$ and $A_{1} A_{2}$, the latter having no point on $C_{1}: x_{1}^{2}+4 x_{2}^{2}+3 x_{1} x_{4}=0$.

The configuration in $X$ just described characterizes

$$
k, l, 0,2 n, m+3 n, n, l, k, 0, m
$$

in the sense that any $S_{3}$, with no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line, whose set $W$ contains a quadric $Q$ which provides the above configuration, is conjugate to $k, l, 0,2 n, m+3 n, n, l, k, 0, m$ under a collineation of $X$. A proof will be given by showing how to select a coordinate system in $X$ so that $S_{3}$ takes the given form; this will be done by going backwards from the configuration through the steps by which it was determined. We shall use primed letters $P_{1}^{\prime}, Q_{1}^{\prime}, A_{1}^{\prime}$, etc. until we can see that the accents may be dropped and the letters have the same significance as abọve.

Denote by $\sigma_{2}{ }^{\prime}$ the plane in which the four lines combine into two, and by $\sigma_{1}{ }^{\prime}$ the other. Denote by $A_{2}^{\prime}$ the intersection of $\sigma_{1}{ }^{\prime}$ and $\sigma_{2}{ }^{\prime}$; denote by $C_{i}^{\prime}$ the intersection of $J$ with $\sigma_{i}{ }^{\prime}$. Denote by $A_{3}^{\prime}$ and $A_{5}^{\prime}$ the intersection of $C_{2}^{\prime}$ and the polar of $A_{2}^{\prime}$ with respect to $C_{2}^{\prime}$, with $A_{3}^{\prime}$ the one whose cone in $S_{3}$ has vertex $P_{2}^{\prime}$ on the ruling of $Q_{2}^{\prime}$ determined by the line on $A_{2}^{\prime}$ in $\sigma_{1}{ }^{\prime}$ which does not intersect $C_{1}^{\prime}$. Denote by $A_{4}^{\prime}$ the point of $C_{1}^{\prime}$ which gives in $S_{3}$ the cone with vertex on the ruling of $Q_{2}^{\prime}$ given by $A_{2}^{\prime} A_{5}^{\prime}$, and denote by $A_{1}^{\prime}$ the intersection of the polar of $A_{2}^{\prime}$ with the third line in $\sigma_{1}{ }^{\prime}$, which is not tangent to $C_{1}{ }^{\prime}$. Denote by $P_{1}^{\prime}$ the vertex of the cone determined by $A_{4}^{\prime}$, and by $P_{3}^{\prime}$ the vertex of the cone determined by $A_{5}^{\prime}$.

The plane $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ is completely determined by the configuration. The plane is of type 9 of the list of planes, and we shall now show that $P_{1}^{\prime}, P_{2}^{\prime}, P_{3}^{\prime}$
will serve as $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ of that canonical form. The points $P_{2}^{\prime}$ and $P_{3}^{\prime}$ are on the cubic curve $K_{2}^{\prime}$ determined by the vertices of the cones given by points of $C_{2}^{\prime}$. The cubic $K_{2}^{\prime}$ lies on the cone with vertex at $P_{3}^{\prime} . \quad P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime}$ is a ruling of $Q_{2}^{\prime}$ determined by the line $A_{2}^{\prime} A_{3}^{\prime}$, which is tangent to $C_{2}^{\prime}$. Hence, $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime}$ is tangent to $K_{2}^{\prime}$ at $P_{2}^{\prime}$, and hence $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ is tangent to the cone with vertex at $P_{3}^{\prime}$ and therefore intersects the cone in a single line. The absolute conic of the plane $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ is therefore tangent to the line $P_{2}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ at $P_{2}^{\prime}$. The cone with vertex at $P_{1}^{\prime}$ is also tangent to the plane $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$, which we proceed to show. The cone with vertex at $P_{1}^{\prime}$, given by $A_{4}^{\prime}$, has its vertex on the cubic $K_{1}^{\prime}$. $K_{1}^{\prime}$ has one point besides $P_{1}^{\prime}$ on each of the rulings of the cone with vertex at $P_{1}^{\prime}$ except the ruling $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ which is determined by the tangent to $C_{1}^{\prime}$ at $A_{4}^{\prime}$. Every point of $K_{1}^{\prime}$ is on $Q_{2}^{\prime}$. The points common to $Q_{2}^{\prime}$ and $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ are the points of $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime}$ and $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$. We have just noted that $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ has no second point on $K_{1}^{\prime} ; P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime}$ is a ruling of $Q_{2}^{\prime}$ determined by a line in $\sigma_{2}^{\prime}$ and has no point except $P_{1}^{\prime}$ on $K_{1}^{\prime}$. Hence, the plane $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ is tangent to the cone with vertex at $P_{1}^{\prime}$, and the absolute conic in it is tangent to $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ at $P_{1}^{\prime} . \quad P_{3}^{\prime}$ is therefore the pole of $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime}$ with respect to the absolute conic, and $P_{1}^{\prime}$ and $P_{2}^{\prime}$ are on the conic. The vertices of the frame of reference in $X$ can be selected, and in only one way when $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ are given, so that $P_{1}^{\prime} P_{2}^{\prime} P_{3}^{\prime}$ is in canonical form. Then for this $S_{3}$ the $A_{i}^{\prime}$ 's have the coordinates of the $A_{i}$ 's for the space 54 .

The points $P_{1}^{\prime}, P_{2}^{\prime}, P_{3}^{\prime}$ are now $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ with the proper coordinates. To complete the canonical form it is necessary to determine the coordinates of $P_{4} . \quad P_{4}$ is determined as the intersection of two rulings of $Q_{2}$. One ruling is determined by $A_{1} A_{2}$, and the other by $A_{2} A_{5}$. The corresponding points on $V$ are

$$
A_{1} A_{2} \rightarrow 1,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0, \quad A_{2} A_{5} \rightarrow 0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0
$$

The respective spaces tangent to $V$ are $a_{8}=a_{9}=a_{10}=0$ and $a_{2}=a_{3}=a_{8}=0$. Hence, $P_{4}=a_{1}, 0,0, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, 0,0,0$. There are further conditions that the $a$ 's must satisfy. So far we have required of $C_{2}$ only that it pass through $A_{3}$ and $A_{5}$ and that $A_{2}$ and $A_{3} A_{5}$ be pole and polar with respect to it; also it has been required of $C_{1}$ only that it pass through $A_{4}$ and that $A_{2}$ and $A_{1} A_{4}$ be pole and polar.

Any point of $S_{3}$ is

$$
k+a_{1} n, l, 0, a_{4} n, m+a_{5} n, a_{6} n, l+a_{7} n, k, 0, m
$$

For this point

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=k^{2}+a_{1} k n-a_{6} l n \\
& B_{2}=-l^{2}-a_{7} l n+a_{4} m n+a_{4} a_{5} n^{2} \\
& B_{3}=k m+a_{1} m n+a_{4} a_{6} n^{2} \\
& B_{4}=l m+a_{4} k n \\
& B_{5}=m^{2}+k l+a_{7} k n+a_{5} m n
\end{aligned}
$$

If we take the point of intersection of $C_{1}$ and $A_{1} A_{4}$ to be $1,0,0,2,0$, this requires $Q^{\prime}$, the quadric determined by it, to be a cone. The result is that $a_{5}+2 a_{4}=0 . \quad a_{4}$ cannot be zero since $S_{3}$ contains no $\tau$-plane. Hence, we may take $a_{4}=2$ and $a_{5}=3$. If we take $1,1,0,3,0$ to be on $C_{1}$, this will give $a_{7}=0$. The cone with vertex at $P_{2}$ is tangent to $P_{3} P_{4}$ at $P_{3}$; this requires $a_{1}=0$. It requires one more point to fix $C_{2}$; let it be $0,1,1,0,2$; then $a_{6}=1$. Hence, the point $P_{4}$ is $0,0,0,2,3,1,0,0,0,0$, and the space $S_{3}$ is space 54 .

This configuration in $X$ which has just been shown to characterize the space 54 can be described by elements in $S_{3}$. We give a representation of the

quadric $Q_{2}: l m+2 k n=0$ in Diagram 1. This is a diagram of points and lines on $Q_{2}$. The horizontal lines are the rulings of $Q_{2}$ determined by the pencil of lines on $A_{2}$ in $\sigma_{2}$; the vertical lines are rulings of the other set and are determined by the pencil on $A_{2}$ in $\sigma_{1}$. The cubic $K_{2}$ passes through the points marked with a cross $(\times)$; the cubic $K_{1}$ passes through the points marked with a circle ( $O$ ). Each horizontal line contains one circle, and may contain two, one, or no crosses. The line $P_{2} P_{4}$ contains no circle and so is determined by a line in $\sigma_{1}$ which does not intersect $C_{1}$; it is not a ruling of any cone with vertex on $K_{1}$. The two vertical lines each containing just one circle are determined by the two tangents to $C_{1}$ from $A_{2}$; likewise the two horizontal lines each containing one cross are determined by the two tangents to $C_{2}$ from $A_{2}$. The horizontal line through $P_{2}$, since it has no other cross on
it, is determined by the tangent to $C_{2}$ at the point which determines the cone with vertex at $P_{2}$; it is the ruling of the cone which is tangent to $K_{2}$ at $P_{2}$. This line contains $P_{1}$ which is on $K_{1}$. The vertical line through $P_{1}$ has no other circle on it; it is a ruling of $Q_{2}$ and of the cone with vertex at $P_{1}$; it is tangent to $K_{1}$ at $P_{1} . \quad P_{3}$ is on this line. The horizontal line through $P_{3}$ contains no other cross; it is a ruling of the cone with vertex at $P_{3}$ and hence is tangent to $K_{2}$ at $P_{3}$. Whenever for a given $S_{3}$ the set $W$ contains a quadric on which the two cubic curves have the above relations, then the configuration in $X$ of the preceding pages exists, and the $S_{3}$ is conjugate to 54 under a collineation of $X$.

In the diagram above each point of $Q_{2}$ is given by its coordinates $k, l, m, n$, and each, excepting the points of $K_{1}$ and $K_{2}$, has a number written underneath it. Each of these numbers $3,4, \cdots, 50$ is the number of the cubic on which the point lies. The numbers were assigned arbitrarily to the cubics; they are included here for future reference.

We have seen that every nondegenerate ruled quadric of the set $W$ has on it two cubics. No other cubic can have more than one point on $Q$, since two points $P_{a}$ and $P_{\beta}$ would determine two three-spaces $R_{a}$ and $R_{\beta}$ in $X$, and their plane of intersection would determine a third set of rulings of $Q$. The number of points of $Q$ is $(p+1)^{2}$; there are $p+1$ points on each of $K_{1}$ and $K_{2}$; there remain $p^{2}-1$ points of $Q$, which is the number of cubics besides $K_{1}$ and $K_{2}$. Thus the diagram accounts for all the cubics in $S_{3}$.

We have given two equivalent, and closely related, ways of characterizing the space 54 in geometric terms which are independent of any coordinate system. An attempt to apply these criteria to an arbitrary $S_{3}$ with no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line leads to a long series of computations. The goal is to show that any such $S_{3}$ is the one we have been studying, and hence that any $S_{3}$ whose quintic polynomial $f(x)$ is irreducible is conjugate to 54 . The application of this last criterion, namely, the irreducibility of $f(x)$, is relatively a simple matter; the application of the former is likely to require months of work. Although it will be possible to show that the necessary condition, the irreducibility of $f(x)$, is sufficient to ensure that $S_{3}$ is 54 , the determination of the transformation which puts one such $S_{3}$ into another will require essentially determination of the above configuration in $X$.

It is clear that one is dealing with pairs of cubics when one undertakes to determine the configuration in $X$ for a given $S_{3}$. The number of pairs of cubics is large; one finds immediately that not every pair is a canonical pair, and then right away that not every cubic can be one of a canonical pair. A closer look at individual cubics is therefore indicated. So far one cubic is like another. When we consider planes which osculate the cubics, then differences appear.

Each point $P$ of $S_{3}$ is on one and only one cubic $K$. The cubic has an osculating plane at $P$. The osculating plane is tangent to the cone $Q$ with vertex at $P$ along the ruling of $Q$ which is tangent to $K$, the ruling which contains no other point of $K$. For example, the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ osculates the cubic
$K_{1}$ at $P_{1}$ (page 707). The osculating plane $\rho$, like every other plane in $S_{3}$, contains an absolute conic $C$ determined by the relation of $\rho$ to $V$. The equation $B_{5} x_{1}-B_{4} x_{2}+B_{3} x_{3}-B_{2} x_{4}+B_{1} x_{5}=0$ is used to determine both the conic $C$ and the set $W$ of quadrics, and hence also the cubics. The points of $X$ which give conics in $\rho$ which consist of a single line counted twice must give cones in $S_{3}$, since the conic in $\rho$ is the intersection of $\rho$ with the quadric. The only degenerate parabolas in $\rho$, determined by points in $X$, are the tangents to $C$. A plane which passes through two points $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ of a cubic $K$, unless it is tangent to one of the cones with vertices at $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$, meets $K$ in a third point, viz., the intersection of the two rulings aside from $P_{1} P_{2}$ in which it meets the eones. If $\rho$ is tangent to the cone with vertex at $P_{1}$, along the ruling $P_{1} P_{2}$, then it is tangent to $K$ at $P_{2}$. Hence,

Any plane in $S_{3}$ is tangent to those cubics which pass through the points of the absolute conic $C$ and to no others; the points of tangency are the points of $C$.

If $\rho$ is the plane which osculates the cubic $K$ at the point $P$, then $\rho$ is tangent to $p$ other cubics. Some of these cubics may osculate $\rho$. The number of cubics which osculate a given plane is a projective invariant. If the $p+1$ planes which osculate a given cubic are examined, a set of numbers is obtained which enables us to distinguish among the cubics.

We shall say that a cubic is of type $a_{1}, a_{2}, a_{3}, a_{4}$ if the osculating plane at each of $a_{i}$ points osculates $i$ cubics. (We are dealing here, of course, with space 54.) $a_{1}+a_{2}+a_{3}+a_{4}=p+1=8$. The distribution of the cubics into types is given by the following table:

Type $\quad$ Names of cubics

| $2,3,2,1$ | $1,14,19,26,39$ |
| :--- | :--- |
| $2,1,4,1$ | $2,16,27,35,37$ |
| $2,5,0,1$ | $6,28,34,45,46$ |
| $4,3,0,1$ | $10,18,23,36,50$ |
| $2,4,2,0$ | $3,7,8,13,33$ |
| $3,2,3,0$ | $4,5,31,32,42$ |
| $3,4,1,0$ | $9,11,12,24,43 ; 17,22,40,48,49$ |
| $5,2,1,0$ | $15,20,21,30,38 ; 25,29,41,44,47$. |

This table records only a small selection of the information about $S_{3}$ that must be sought out. There is not enough here to distinguish between two sets of five cubics of each of the last two types; there is enough information to enable us to go on to the determination of canonical pairs of cubics.

Each of the twenty cubics of the first four types in the above list has an osculating plane which osculates four cubics. There are therefore five planes
in $S_{3}$ each of which osculates four cubics. The planes and the cubics which they osculate are

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
k+3 l+2 m+4 n & =0, & & 1,2,46,50 \\
k+5 l+2 m & =0, & & 6,18,26,35 \\
k+5 l+5 m+n=0, & & 14,23,27,28 \\
k+3 l+6 m+6 n=0, & & 10,16,19,34 \\
k+2 l+3 m+6 n=0, & & 36,37,39,45
\end{array}
$$

From this list and the preceding table one reads immediately that if there are any canonical pairs besides 1,2 , they are 26,$35 ; 14,27 ; 19,16$; and 39,37 . If two cubics are a canonical pair, they must be of types $2,3,2,1$ and $2,1,4,1$, and they must have a common osculating plane which osculates four cubics.

A proof that each of the given pairs is a canonical pair could be given by finding the quadric on which the two cubics lie and then noting that we have the configuration which characterizes $l m+2 k n=0$. We shall do this for one pair and then exhibit the collineation which transforms the pair in question into 1,2 ; the collineation is of period five, hence there are five canonical pairs, which could only be these.

The four points $1,4,1,1 ; 1,6,0,3 ; 1,3,2,3 ; 1,3,2,6$, two on each of cubics 16 and 19 , determine four three-spaces in $X$ which intersect in $A_{2}^{\prime}=$ $1,5,1,4,2$. The quadric $Q_{2}^{\prime}$ of the set $W$ determined by $A_{2}^{\prime}$ is

$$
2 k^{2}+k l+k m+4 k n+4 l^{2}+2 l m+5 l n+m^{2}+2 m n+6 n^{2}=0 .
$$

It is represented in Diagram 2. The points of cubic 19 are marked with

circles, those of cubic 16 with crosses. The horizontal and vertical lines are rulings of $Q_{2}^{\prime}$. This diagram has the same arrangement of vertices of cones and rulings of $Q_{2}^{\prime}$ tangent to cubics 19 and 16 as characterized the quadric $Q_{2}: l m+2 k n=0$ and cubics 1 and 2 . Hence if $P_{1}^{\prime}, P_{2}^{\prime}, P_{3}^{\prime}$ are given the coordinates of $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ in the earlier diagram, $S_{3}$ will appear in the form 54. Thus cubics 19 and 16 are shown to be a canonical pair.

The transformation which puts $X$ into itself, $S_{3}$ into itself, and cubics 19 and 16 into cubics 1 and 2 respectively is

$$
T=\left[\begin{array}{lllll}
1 & 2 & 3 & 6 & 6 \\
6 & 0 & 2 & 6 & 3 \\
3 & 1 & 5 & 4 & 2 \\
4 & 1 & 0 & 6 & 2 \\
3 & 2 & 5 & 3 & 2
\end{array}\right]
$$

The induced transformation in $S_{3}$ is

$$
T=\left[\begin{array}{llllllllll}
2 & 5 & 5 & 2 & 4 & 5 & 6 & 6 & 4 & 3 \\
2 & 3 & 0 & 5 & 0 & 2 & 5 & 3 & 4 & 2 \\
0 & 2 & 3 & 6 & 4 & 6 & 5 & 4 & 6 & 4 \\
3 & 3 & 6 & 5 & 4 & 1 & 6 & 0 & 4 & 1 \\
6 & 3 & 6 & 3 & 5 & 1 & 4 & 6 & 3 & 0 \\
6 & 6 & 5 & 0 & 5 & 1 & 4 & 5 & 4 & 1 \\
5 & 3 & 0 & 3 & 3 & 2 & 1 & 4 & 3 & 3 \\
6 & 1 & 2 & 5 & 2 & 2 & 0 & 2 & 3 & 3 \\
3 & 0 & 4 & 0 & 2 & 2 & 5 & 2 & 0 & 2 \\
5 & 6 & 1 & 2 & 5 & 5 & 5 & 5 & 4 & 6
\end{array}\right] .
$$

It may be verified that points of $S_{3}$ are transformed as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (1,3,2,3) T=(1,3,0,6,4,3,3,1,0,2) T=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0 \\
& (1,4,1,1) T=(1,4,0,2,4,1,4,1,0,1) T=0,1,0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0 \\
& (1,6,0,3) T=(1,6,0,6,2,3,6,1,0,0) T=0,0,0,0,1,0,0,0,0,1 \\
& (1,4,6,5) T=(1,4,0,3,0,5,4,1,0,6) T=0,0,0,2,3,1,0,0,0,0
\end{aligned}
$$

This verifies that $T$ transforms $S_{3}$ into itself by putting $P_{i}^{\prime}$ into $P_{i}, i=$ $1,2,3,4$. Moreover, noting that in $X$ the points $A_{1}(=1,0,0,0,0), A_{1} T$, $A_{1} T^{2}, A_{1} T^{3}, A_{1} T^{4}$ are linearly independent, and that $A_{1} T^{5}=A_{1}$, we have the result that $T$ is of period 5.

That the collineation group of $X$ contains a transformation of period 5 that puts $S_{3}$ into itself was to be expected. $S_{3}$ determines the irreducible polynomial congruence $f(x)=0$ for the value of $k / n$ which would make $B_{1}=\cdots$ $=B_{5}=0$, and determine a point of $V$. If $X, V, S$, and $S_{3}$ were immersed in spaces $\bar{X}, \bar{V}, \bar{S}$, and $\bar{S}_{3}$ over $\operatorname{GF}\left(p^{5}\right)$, then the congruence would remain unchanged but would be completely solvable. The Galois group of $\operatorname{GF}\left(p^{5}\right)$
relative to $\mathrm{GF}(p)$ is of order 5 . This group interchanges the points of intersection of $\bar{V}$ and $\bar{S}_{3}$ cyclically; it puts $\bar{X}$ into itself, $X$ into itself, $S_{3}$ into itself. It is not identity in $S_{3}$, for then it would be identity in $\bar{S}_{3}$. Since the only possible canonical pairs of cubics are the five given above, the Galois group must interchange them.

The collineation of order 5 just described exists for any $p$, but the fact that the collineation and its powers are the only collineations of $X$ which put $S_{3}$ into itself depends on our knowledge of the particular space with $p=7$. We note that we cannot expect to find any simple short procedure to determine a transformation of $X$ into itself which puts an arbitrary $S_{3}$ with an irreducible $f(x)$ into the particular one we have been studying. If it can be done at all, it can be done in only five ways, and doing it requires essentially the finding of a canonical pair of cubics.

We proceed to examine an arbitrary $S_{3}$ which has no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line. In $S_{3}$ we select an arbitrary point $P_{1}$ and take for $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ the plane which osculates the cubic through $P_{1}$. A coordinate system can be selected so that the plane is $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m . \quad S_{3}$ contains

$$
P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0 .
$$

For any point $P$ in $S_{3}$ the $B$ 's are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& B_{1}=k^{2}+a_{8} k n-a_{6} l n+a_{3} m n+a_{3} a_{5} n^{2} \\
& B_{2}=a_{9} k n-l^{2}-a_{7} l n+a_{4} m n+a_{4} a_{5} n^{2} \\
& B_{3}=k m-a_{3} l n-\left(a_{3} a_{7}-a_{4} a_{6}\right) n^{2} \\
& B_{4}=l m+a_{4} k n-\left(a_{3} a_{9}-a_{4} a_{8}\right) n^{2} \\
& B_{5}=m^{2}+a_{5} m n+k l+a_{7} k n+a_{8} l n-\left(a_{6} a_{9}-a_{7} a_{8}\right) n^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

The cone of the set $W$ with vertex at $P_{1}$ is $a_{9} B_{4}-a_{4} B_{2}=0$. Now transformation $T_{17}$ changes $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ into itself leaving $P_{1}$ fixed, and in it $c$ can be chosen to make $a_{4}=0$ if $a_{9} \neq 0$. This transformation moves $P_{2}$ along the conic $C$ in $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$, so we may assume $a_{4}=0$ if $a_{9} \neq 0$. If $a_{4}=0$, the cone with vertex at $P_{1}$ is $B_{4}=l m-a_{3} a_{9} n^{2}=0$, which intersects $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ in the two lines $l=0$ and $m=0$. But since the plane osculates the cubic through $P_{1}$, it must be tangent to the cone, and hence the choice of $P_{1}$ and the plane brings with it the result that $a_{9}$ in $P_{4}$ is zero. Since $a_{9}=0$, it follows that $a_{4} \neq 0$, for otherwise $B_{4}=0$ and $B_{2}=0$ would be two cones with vertices at $P_{1}$. Since $a_{9}=0$ and $a_{4} \neq 0, T_{17}$ can be selected to reduce $a_{7}$ to zero.

We now solve $B_{3}=0$ for $m$ in terms of $k, l, n$; we use this value of $m$ in $B_{1}=0$ to solve for $l$ in terms of $k$ and $n$; we use this value of $l$ to get $m$ in terms of $k$ and $n$; and we use the values of $l$ and $m$ in one of $B_{2}=0, B_{4}=0$, $B_{5}=0$. We obtain the equation

$$
k^{5}+\alpha k^{4} n+\beta k^{3} n^{2}+\gamma k^{2} n^{3}+\delta k n^{4}+\varepsilon n^{2}=0
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha=2 a_{8}, \quad \beta=2 a_{3} a_{5}+a_{8}^{2}, & \gamma=2 a_{3} a_{5} a_{8}+4 a_{3} a_{4} a_{6} \\
\delta=a_{3}^{2} a_{5}^{2}+4 a_{3} a_{4} a_{6} a_{8}+a_{3}^{3} a_{4}-a_{4} a_{5} a_{6}^{2}, & \varepsilon=a_{3}^{3} a_{4} a_{8}+a_{4}^{2} a_{6}^{3}-a_{3}^{2} a_{4} a_{5} a_{6} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The polynomial $f(x)=x^{5}+\alpha x^{4}+\beta x^{3}+\gamma x^{2}+\delta x+\varepsilon$ is irreducible. The possible $S_{3}$ 's are those such that the $\alpha$ 's of $P_{4}$ will give $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \delta, \varepsilon$ of an $f(x)$ which is irreducible.

We note that multiplication of the coordinates of $P_{4}$ by $t \neq 0$ in $\operatorname{GF}(p)$ changes $f(x)=0$ to the equation whose roots are $t$ times those of $f(x)=0$. This would allow us to restrict attention to $P_{4}$ 's with an arbitrary nonzero coordinate equal to 1 , or to one $f(x)$ of the set obtained from one by multiplying its roots by $t \neq 0$. Making use of a change of the unit point in $X$ we can do both of these things. The change of coordinates in $X$ carried out by the diagonal matrix with $1, d, 1 / d, d^{2}, 1 / d^{2}$ down the main diagonal does not change the coordinates of $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ but does change $f(x)=0$ to the equation whose roots are $d$ times its roots.

We may therefore look for possible $S_{3}{ }^{\prime}$ 's by separating them into classes: (1) those with $a_{3}=0$, and (2) those with $a_{3}=1$.
(1) If $a_{3}=0$, then $\gamma=0$ and $\beta-2 \alpha^{2}=0$. By taking account of the fact that changing the unit point in $X$ and changing the coordinates of $P_{4}$ by multiplication by $t \neq 0$ do not change $S_{3}$, it will be found that there are 14 distinct $S_{3}$ 's for which $a_{3}=0$.
(2) When $a_{3} \neq 0$, it may be made 1 , and at the same time $\alpha$ may be made 1 if it is not zero, or if $\alpha=0, \beta$ may be made 1 if it is a square, or a particular not-square if it is not a square. If $a_{3}=1, \alpha$ determines $a_{8}$; then $\beta$ determines $a_{5}$, and $\gamma$ determines $a_{4} a_{6}$. With $a_{8}, a_{5}$, and $a_{4} a_{6}$ determined, $\delta$ and $\varepsilon$ give two linear congruences to determine $a_{4}$ and $a_{6}$. These determine $a_{4}$ and $a_{6}$ uniquely when they are independent, and when they are not, the value of $a_{4} a_{6}$ determines $a_{4}$ and $a_{6}$. There are $66 S_{3}$ 's so obtained. ${ }^{23}$

The final step in the solution of the problem is now simple. In any threespace in $S_{3}$ which has no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line, an arbitrary point $P_{1}$ may be selected and then a coordinate system in $X$ so that

$$
P_{1}=1,0,0,0,0,0,0,1,0,0
$$

the osculating plane of the cubic through $P_{1}$, is $k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m$, and $P_{4}=0,0, a_{3}, a_{4}, a_{5}, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9}, 0$. There are 80 sets of $a_{3}, \cdots, a_{9}$ such that $f(x)$ is irreducible and no two of the $f(x)$ 's can be obtained one from the

[^17]other by replacing $x$ with $t x$. These 80 possibilities may all be realized by proper choice of $P_{1}$ in space 54. The group of collineations of $X$ which transform space 54 into itself distributes the 400 points into 80 sets of conjugates. Two $P_{1}$ 's selected from two different sets give different $f(x)$ 's since $f(x)$ determines $P_{4}$ uniquely.

## 7. Removal of dependence on the value of $p$

Some of the argument of the preceding pages depended on $p$ being 7 , but most of it did not. The final result is independent of the value of $p$, and we now divest the argument of dependence on $p$.

In the treatment of lines, planes, and the first $53(+4)$ three-spaces any dependence on $p=7$ comes from the selection of particular polynomials having certain required properties, generally an irreducible quadratic, or cubic, or quartic. The existence of such polynomials does not depend on $p$. We confine our attention to space 54 , i.e., to $S_{3}$ with no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line. The locus $J$ in $X$ exists, the four-parameter set $W$ of quadrics in $S_{3}$ exists, no quadric in the set $W$ has more than one vertex, and no two cones in the set $W$ have the same vertex. $\quad S_{3}$ contains $p^{2}+1$ nonintersecting rational cubic curves. The Galois group $\Gamma$ of $\mathrm{GF}\left(p^{5}\right)$ relative to $\mathrm{GF}(p)$ transforms $X$ into $X, V$ into $V$, and $S_{3}$ into $S_{3}$. Though the final result is the same for all $p$, there are different geometric situations for different types of the prime.

When $p=5 t+1$, both $p+1$ and $p^{2}+1$ are congruent to $2, \bmod 5$. Hence, $\Gamma$ must transform two cubics, $K_{1}$ and $K_{2}$, each into itself, and on each of the invariant cubics it leaves two points fixed. Let the fixed points in $S_{3}$ be $P_{1}$ and $P_{4}$ on $K_{1}$, and $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$ on $K_{2}$. $\Gamma$ must then leave fixed the four points, on $J$, in $X$, which give cones with vertices at these points, and also $\Gamma$ must leave fixed the point $A_{2}$ in $X$, not on $J$, which gives the nondegenerate ruled quadric $Q$ on which $K_{1}$ and $K_{2}$ lie. Having these special elements in $X$ and $S_{3}$, it is comparatively easy by the methods that have been used to show that a coordinate system can be selected so that $S_{3}$ is

$$
k, l, 0, n, m, r n, l, k, 0, m
$$

where $r$ is not a fifth power, $\bmod p$, but is otherwise arbitrary.
The situation is quite different from the case where $p=7$ and there are no invariant cubics, no fixed cones, no fixed nondegenerate ruled quadric. When $p=5 t+1$, the point $A_{2}$ is the intersection of the fixed planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$ determined by the cubics $K_{1}$ and $K_{2}$. In each of the planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$ the four lines on $A_{2}$ which determine the rulings of $Q$ through the vertices of the four fixed cones reduce to two. The point $A_{2}$ is outside both conics $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ in the planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$.

When $p=5 t-1$, then $p+1$ is divisible by $5, p^{2}+1$ is congruent to 2 , mod 5. Hence, in this case there are two fixed cubics, but the cubics have no fixed points. The fixed cubics determine the planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$ in $X$ and a fixed quadric $Q$ of the set $W$. The intersection $A_{2}$ of planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$ is inside
both conics $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ in the fixed planes. The polars of $A_{2}$ with respect to conics $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$ are fixed, under $\Gamma$, and they determine two fixed lines in $S_{3}$.

When $p=5 t \pm 2$, then there is no cubic in $S_{3}$ left fixed by $\Gamma$, and hence there are no fixed points. The number of quadrics in $W$ is congruent to 1 , $\bmod 5$, and hence there is a fixed quadric $Q^{\prime}$. Neither $Q^{\prime}$ nor the point $A^{\prime}$ in $X$ which determines it came forward to help in characterizing space 54 for $p=7 . \quad Q^{\prime}$ is nondegenerate and has no rulings; the number of points on $Q^{\prime}$ is $p^{2}+1$, one on each cubic.

Our first step in identifying the space 54 , with $p=7$, was to show that an $S_{3}$ containing a quadric in the set $W$ on which the two cubics were properly related to each other could be put in the canonical form in which 54 appears. When $p=5 t+1$, the group $\Gamma$ picks out a quadric with two cubics on it and gives all the necessary information to determine a canonical form. With $p=7$ we started with a configuration we could not be sure was in every $S_{3}$, but in this case there is no uncertainty.

Let $A_{2}$ be the point in $X$ which determines the nondegenerate ruled quadric $Q$ left fixed by $\Gamma .^{24}$ On $A_{2}$ are fixed planes $\sigma_{1}$ and $\sigma_{2}$ containing fixed conics $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$. On $C_{1}$ are fixed points $A_{3}$ and $A_{5}$ which determine in $S_{3}$ fixed cones with vertices at $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$ respectively; $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$ are points of the cubic $K_{1}$. On $C_{2}$ are fixed points $A_{1}$ and $A_{4}$ which determine cones with vertices at $P_{4}$ and $P_{1}$ on $K_{2}$.

The lines $P_{1} P_{2}$ and $P_{3} P_{4}$ are rulings of $Q$, they are rulings of the cones with vertices on $K_{1}$ at $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$, and they are the lines tangent to $K_{1}$ at $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$. Similarly, lines $P_{1} P_{3}$ and $P_{2} P_{4}$ are rulings of $Q$, they are rulings of the cones with vertices at $P_{1}$ and $P_{4}$ on $K_{2}$, and they are tangents to $K_{2}$ at $P_{1}$ and $P_{4}$.

The plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ osculates $K_{2}$ at $P_{1}$, since the plane is tangent to $K_{2}$ at $P_{1}$ and has no other point on $K_{2}$; it is tangent to $K_{1}$ at $P_{2}$. The cone with vertex at $P_{3}$ is tangent to $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ along $P_{2} P_{3}$. Hence, the points $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}$ have the proper relations so that the plane takes the form

$$
k, l, 0,0, m, 0, l, k, 0, m
$$

It is necessary only to determine coordinates of $P_{4}$, which is located by rulings of $Q$ through $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$. We still have at our disposal the coordinates of one point on $C_{1}$ and of one point on $C_{2}$. These can be selected so that $P_{4}=$ $0,0,0,1,0, a_{6}, 0,0,0,0$, where $f(x)=x^{5}+a_{6}^{3}$ is irreducible, i.e., where $a_{6}$ is not a fifth power. A change of the unit point will change $f(x)$ into $x^{5}+$ $d^{5} a_{6}^{3}$, which says that without changing the choice of $P_{1}$ the constant term in $f(x)$ can be made to take any value in one coset of the nonzero numbers in $\mathrm{GF}(p)$ with respect to the subgroup of fifth powers. The points $P_{1}, P_{2}$,

[^18]$P_{3}, P_{4}$ enter indistinguishably, i.e., any one of them can be taken for $P_{1}$ in the above determination of coordinates of $P_{4}$. By changing $P_{1}$ the constant term in $f(x)$ may be made any number in $\mathrm{GF}(p)$ which is not a fifth power. Therefore, when $p=5 t+1$ and $S_{3}$ has no point on $V$ and no $\Sigma$-line, a coordinate system can be selected so that $S_{3}$ is $k, l, 0, n, m, r n, l, k, 0, m$, where $r$ is an arbitrary number not a fifth power in $\operatorname{GF}(p)$.

In the foregoing consideration of $S_{3}$ for $p=5 t+1$, attention was directed to the value of $p$ at only two places: (1) $p+1$ and $p^{2}+1$ were both congruent to $2, \bmod 5$, which ensured two cubics fixed under $\Gamma$ and two fixed points on each cubic; and (2) $\quad p-1=0, \bmod 5$, which permits the existence of the polynomial $x^{5}+a_{6}^{3}$, irreducible in $\operatorname{GF}(p)$. For other primes we do not have the convenient $P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}, P_{4}$ to work with, and neither can we get the simple canonical form.

We can retain the argument and get a canonical form in the following manner. For $p=5 t-1, p^{2}=1$, $\bmod 5$, so that $p^{2}+1$ and $\left(p^{2}\right)^{2}+1$ are both congruent to $2, \bmod 5$. For $p=5 t \pm 2, p^{4}+1$ and $\left(p^{4}\right)^{2}+1$ are both congruent to $2, \bmod 5$. Thus, if we immerse $X, S$, and $S_{3}$ in spaces $\bar{X}, \bar{S}$, and $\bar{S}_{3}$ over $\operatorname{GF}\left(p^{2}\right)$ and $\operatorname{GF}\left(p^{4}\right)$ respectively in the two cases, we recover the two fixed cubics and the two fixed points on each; $f(x)$ is still irreducible in the extended fields. The argument goes unchanged to give a canonical form for $\bar{S}_{3}$, but now $a_{6}$ is a number in $\operatorname{GF}\left(p^{2}\right)$ or $\operatorname{GF}\left(p^{4}\right)$.

A canonical form for $\bar{S}_{3}$ determines a canonical form for $S_{3}$, and vice versa. For $p$ 's not of the form $5 t+1$ we can not use the elements fixed under $\Gamma$ so directly to get a canonical form that will be useful for the groups. However, knowing that one $S_{3}$ which gives an irreducible quintic is related to $V$ in the same way as any other, we may take any such $S_{3}$ for the canonical form.

To determine that two $S_{3}$ 's are conjugate under a collineation of $X$, it is necessary only to see that the polynomials $f(x)$ for both are irreducible. To determine the collineation is a direct and reasonably simple problem when $p=5 t+1$; it is not so simple when $p=5 t \pm 2$. Even at this late stage, when the essentials of the problem and its solution are quite clear, the characterization of $S_{3}$ by means of the geometric configuration we did use or by any other looks fortuitous. If we incline to think that now the somewhat tentative method used for $p=7$ can be replaced by the direct method used for $p=5 t+1$, we are given pause when we recognize that the work must be carried out in spaces over GF $\left(p^{20}\right)$.

University of Illinois
Urbana, Illinois


[^0]:    Received May 5, 1958.
    ${ }^{1}$ Finite metabelian groups and the lines of a projective four-space, Amer. J. Math., vol. 73 (1951), pp. 539-555.
    ${ }^{2}$ Strictly, the paper establishes the completeness of a corrected list. Four groups, those connected with spaces of $9^{\prime}, 20^{\prime}, 20^{\prime \prime}$, and $21^{\prime}$, were overlooked in the earlier paper. Spaces $20^{\prime}$ and $21^{\prime}$ were first noted by Dr. W. E. Koss and Mr. Peter Yff respectively.

[^1]:    ${ }^{3}$ Finite metabelian groups and Plücker line-coördinates, Amer. J. Math., vol. 62 (1940), pp. 365-379.

[^2]:    ${ }^{4}$ We omit accents for the new coordinates; we wish only to differentiate here between $c^{\text {oordinates }}$ which are zero and those that are not known to be zero.

[^3]:    ${ }^{5}$ We omit the computation because of its length; it is exactly like that which determined the matrix $T_{3}$.
    ${ }^{6}$ In this case $f(\theta)=-1$. The transformation $\theta=1 / \theta^{\prime}$ in (iv) applies, giving $f\left(\theta^{\prime}\right)=\theta^{\prime 3}$.

[^4]:    ${ }^{7}$ If $\rho$ has two points on $V$, it contains a $\Sigma$-line, so we should expect it to come from (c) or (f).
    ${ }^{8}$ One reason for keeping the above canonical form for plane 15 is that it is in print; another reason is to exhibit one of the places where it would be easy to go astray in accounting for all the possibilities. It would not be hard to miss the fact that it makes a difference whether or not $a_{4} / a_{3}$ is a square. Plane 15 was found first, and many attempts were made to change 14 into 15 before they were looked at closely enough to see the difference explained above.

[^5]:    ${ }^{9}$ This point is obtained as the intersection of the polar spaces of $(c, 0, a)$ and $(0, c, b)$.

[^6]:    ${ }^{10}$ We call attention to this, for we shall have frequent use for this space in what follows.

[^7]:    ${ }^{11}$ Spaces $9^{\prime}$, and later $20^{\prime}$ and $20^{\prime \prime}$, were missing from the paper cited earlier; it is desired to keep the numbering of the earlier paper for the other spaces.

[^8]:    ${ }^{12}$ The additional point is

    $$
    \begin{array}{lr}
    a_{6}, a_{8}, a_{3}, a_{4}, 0, a_{6}, a_{7}, a_{8}, a_{9},\left(a_{3} a_{7}-a_{4} a_{6}\right) / a_{6}, & \text { if } a_{6} \neq 0 \\
    a_{7}, a_{9}, a_{3}, a_{4}, 0,0, a_{7}, 0, a_{9}, a_{3}, & \text { if } a_{6}=0, a_{7} \neq 0 \\
    0,1, a_{3}, a_{4}, 0,0,0, a_{8}, a_{9},\left(a_{3} a_{9}-a_{4} a_{8}\right) & \text { if } a_{6}=a_{7}=0
    \end{array}
    $$

[^9]:    ${ }^{13}$ It is to be noted that the $k$ and $l$ here are the parameters of transformation $T_{2}$.

[^10]:    ${ }^{14}$ It will appear later that this second possible $S_{3}$ does not exist.

[^11]:    ${ }^{15}$ We recall that these forms are for $p=7 ;-1$ is not a square.

[^12]:    ${ }^{16}$ There is getting to be less freedom in the change of the unit point, and we should perhaps point out the details here. If in $X$ the point $1, d_{1}, d_{2}, d_{3}, d_{4}$ is taken for the new unit point, the unit point in $S$ is changed to

    $$
    d_{1}, d_{2}, d_{3}, d_{4}, d_{1} d_{2}, d_{1} d_{3}, d_{1} d_{4}, d_{2} d_{3}, d_{2} d_{4}, d_{3} d_{4}
    $$

    In order to keep the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ in the canonical form, it is necessary only to require that $d_{2}=d_{1} d_{4}$. In order to get $P_{4}^{\prime \prime}$ into the desired form, we must have $a_{5} d_{1} d_{2}=a_{10} d_{3} d_{4}=-a_{4} d_{4}$. These requirements can be satisfied since $a_{4} a_{5}$ is not a square; if $a_{4} a_{5}$ were a square, $S_{3}$ would have three points on $V$.

[^13]:    ${ }^{17}$ For the irreducible quartic this comes under a theorem by L. E. Dickson, Criteria for the irreducibility of functions in a finite field, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., vol. 13 (1906), p. 7. The quartic which is the product of two irreducible quadratics defines a GF $\left(p^{2}\right)$ in which the quartic is completely reducible and reducible to quadratic factors in three ways corresponding to the three roots of the resolvent cubic. The roots of the cubic are in GF $\left(p^{2}\right)$, and hence at least one of them is in $\operatorname{GF}(p)$.
    ${ }^{18}$ This is done most easily by transforming both (A) and (C) to the form $x^{3}+\alpha x+\beta=$ 0 which can be made the same for both.

[^14]:    ${ }^{19}$ Again we note that the details are being carried out for $p$ such that -1 is not a square.
    ${ }^{20}$ The simplest way to verify this is to take $S_{3}$ with $r$ arbitrary, change the plane $P_{1} P_{2} P_{3}$ from $n=0$ to $l-a n=0$, and change the coordinate system so that $P_{1}^{\prime}, P_{2}^{\prime}, P_{3}^{\prime}, P_{4}^{\prime}$ are in proper form. It will then appear that for no $a$ except $a=\infty$ is the form of $P_{4}$ left unchanged.

[^15]:    ${ }^{21} \mathrm{We}$ are dealing with $p=7$. For the next several pages we shall be more closely tied to $p=7$ than we have been heretofore. At the end we shall divest the argument of dependence on $p=7$, but it seems desirable to separate the difficulties of the problem from the difficulties that arise from different properties of different primes.

[^16]:    ${ }^{22}$ It is to be noted that in the above argument there is no dependence on $p$ being 7 . We used that assumption when we exhibited the quadric with no rulings, but that fact is not important for our purposes and as will be seen later can be proved easily without any assumption about $p$.

[^17]:    ${ }^{23}$ These results are obtained by examining a list of irreducible quintic polynomials; actually only 560 of the total 3360 need be considered. The list would require a lot of space; the preparation of a list to check the above statements is a long process. In Irreducible quintic congruences, Thesis, University of Illinois, Urbana, 1952, Dr. C. B. Hanneken gives a straightforward method of determining them. His contribution is a direct and relatively simple way to find one of each set of conjugate quintics under the linear fractional group in GF $(p)$.

[^18]:    ${ }^{24}$ In the earlier argument we used primed letters, $A^{\prime}, Q^{\prime}, P^{\prime}$, etc. to denote points, etc. until we found that accents could be dropped and the letters have their usual meanings. As soon as things are named, it will be seen that thev are named properly, so we dispense with accents here.

